



YARA

AFTER HER.

CONFIDENCE M

T

This Novel Provide It



**eBooks
Teach**

thanks

Goldie took my hand into hers

Tears welled up in my eyes

Me: Goldie please don't put me in this
compromising situation

Her: I trust you Yara. Take this as a woman's
request on her death bed

She coughed softly

Me: Are you in pain?

She shook her head no

Me: Goldie you can't expect me to be your husband's wife it sounds somehow and I really don't think I'd be able to do it. No I can't

Her: My children are used to you Yara they will not have problem in accepting you. I trust you with them

Me: But your husband... (Whispering)

Her: I will talk with him

I sighed and looked away

Me: What if I meet someone and fall in love with him? Someone my heart has chosen?

Her: What if you fall in love with Ethan ever thought of that?

Me: I don't know

Her: At least give it a thought see this as an opportunity. Ethan will take you to school you'll finally get that degree you've been yearning. Don't you want that?

At the expense of my feelings and happiness is it worth it?

Whether I agree to this or not you are still going to judge me. Life isn't always fair and we see it differently. I am a housemaid at Mrs Liremi's house

Sponsored

it's not my dream job but when opportunity presents itself you grab it. You don't question it. My mother worked for Liremi family for years she worked for Ethan's parents before she started working for him. Couple of years back she started getting and stopped working I then started working for them. Someone had to work and that person was me my eldest sister since left to Gauteng and

my father only God knows. It's not like I chose to be a housemaid but matric alone can't take you anywhere. I finished matric but never went to varsity other than matric certificate I have diploma in computer literacy. To many people I am a 25 year old working as a maid but I am more than that I have dreams-dreams I wish to fulfil. My dream job has always being a publicist only if God could open doors for me. Being poor is extremely expensive to some is something to be ashamed of but to me is a motivation

Me: I'm not promising anything

Her: I know Yara. Take your time

Me: Can I go back to what I was doing?

She nodded and laid her head on the pillow

“Your present circumstances don’t determine where you can go; they merely determine where you start”

My story starts like this a wife on her deathbed asking me to be her husband’s wife. I am Yara Masia

YARA

I opened the gate and stepped inside the yard

My mother was softly humming whilst rinsing the glass

Me: Mama

She raised her head

Her: You back early today is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine mama. And you how are you feeling?

When I left her in the morning she was complaining about pain on her abdomen

Her: I am better now

Me: Let me fix you cup of chamomile tea

Her: Hay Yara I just said I am fine what's with you?

I sat on the stoop and sighed

Her: Something is wrong with you and I can see it

Me: I am still trying to process everything I will tell you about it later

She shook her head and walked inside the house

GOLDIE

I was diagnosed with cervical cancer couple of years' back that was the most difficult times in our lives. When I was told about it I hit a brick wall I thought I wasn't going to see children grow. I have two amazing children Rotenda and Alexa. I thought about my husband I didn't know how to feel or think. Our marriage hit a rock every time we have sex I'd bleed but Ethan stood by me. When the tests were done it shows it hasn't spread all over the body and that only enough gave me power to fight because it was curable. I started chemotherapy and that that was not an easy journey but I fought. It was very difficult to live with the fact that my cancer may come back and after 1 year of treatment it came back. And I was told it has advanced and there's no cure for it

Ethan hugged me

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I've been thinking

Him: Been doing lot of that lately. Wanna share?

Me: I've always know that one day this cancer will kill me but I never thought it'd be this early. The thought of leaving my children kills me softly

Him: Goldie do we really have to talk about this?

Me: We have to. When I die you are going to marry another woman and God knows how she will treat my children

Him: There's no woman..

I put my finger in his mouth

Me: Don't because we both know they will be another woman after me

He kept quiet

Me: I wish things didn't have to be like this. I'd stay if it was up to me

Him: I really don't feel like engaging in this conversation Goldie

I kissed him

Me: If you going to marry another woman then marry Yara. She is the only woman I'd allow to raise my kids

He looked at me and chuckled

YARA

I cleared my throat and darted my eyes around the house

Ma: Out with it

Me: Huh?

Her: Talk Yara. You've been biting your nails and darting your eyes around the house

Me: I don't know how to say this but...

Her: Start from the beginning

Me: Goldie asked me to marry her husband

Her: What?

Me: Well not now when she passes away

Her: She is already planning her death?

She clapped once

Me: Mama her cancer can't be cured and the doctors already told her that she got few months to live

Her: What happened to faith? Huh?

Me: Isn't about faith mama

Her: That doesn't matter let's talk about the matter at hand. Did you agree to her request?

Me: I said I'll think about it. I honestly don't know what to say mama she said Ethan will look after me and maybe take me to varsity

Her: So you can finally get the degree you've been yearning for?

I nodded repeatedly

Her: Then what's stopping you?

Me: I don't love him and marriage without love is hopeless. I'll be marrying him for myriad reasons and love isn't one of them Mama the relationship is bound to fail

Her: Look around you what do you see? Do you want to end up like me and be the housemaid for the rest of your life?

Me: No

Her: Then sleep on it

She stood up

AYDEN

Me: Viper we've been here for more than two hours where is your guy?

He narrowed his eyes around

Him: I don't know man but Diaz will never disappoint me

Me: I don't like this and if your guy isn't here in thirty minutes then I am off

Him: He must be on his way calm down Tooth

Viper and I were at one of our warehouses we are waiting for someone who wants firearms but it seems like some people don't respect time. I have some errands to run and I won't be waiting for

some motherfucker who doesn't know what he wants. If you say 16h00 then make it 16h00 not a minute later

Panther walked in with the client

Panther: And the king arrived (Chuckles softly)

Me: It's about damn time. Do you know what time is it or perhaps you are not familiar with it?

The client looked at Viper

Viper: Ignore him anger issues

Panther: What's wrong with him?

Me: Let's just get in there and get this done with Panther

Viper and Panther are blood-brothers I met them through their father he runs illegal gambling and I used to spend most of my time there. It's safe to say we are living the dream and I see no one stopping us As a kid I was very aggressive and I can only say I mimicked my father's personality I grew up around guns and I grew fondness of them at an early age. I grew up to be a person who doesn't take junk and crossing paths with Khumalo brother's was a blessing. My gangster life spiral out of control when my father left I wanted to do something in order to escape from my reality-something that does not include wearing a tie and a suit. The Khumalo brother's begun to teach me how to flip and to walk and talk like gangster. I am one person who is not scared of

retaliation

GOLDIE

Ethan didn't take the news very well I expected him to understand but I guess I was wrong

Me: Do you think I am selfish?

Him: Do you want the truth?

Me: That's why I asked

Him: Your actions are selfish; they all have to do with yourself. You can't expect me to love another woman whilst I should be mourning you. And did you ever think that maybe I won't care about taking another wife? Raising children is no-brainer

Me: Ethan...

Him: I am not having this conversation with you. If you die...

Me: When I die

Him: I am going to mourn you I won't lust any woman and if time comes for me to move on I will do so but Yara is out of the question

Me: Okay

I stood up

Him: Where are you going?

Me: Do you care?

ETHAN

I walked out of the en-suite bathroom and sat on the edge of the bed

We often find quick solutions to the problems we

face but sometimes it becomes a mission. When it comes to the matters of the heart we tend to struggle with solutions even more my wife and I have been together for about 12 years and married for 8 years. Our journey of love can take up the whole day our paths crossed when both of us were at our lowest. My hope was to grown old with her but God had other plans with us when the doctor told us her cancer is back my world came crumbling down on me. I knew what was ahead of us; I knew our twins will be left without a mother. I am proud of being her husband and I love being married to Goldie. But God proved to be the decider of things and who am I to go against Him?

Goldie: Are you leaving for work now?

I looked at her

Me: I didn't hear you come in

Her: You seem lost in your own thoughts. I asked if you are going to work or not?

I stood up

Me: I will be working out of the office today so I'll be going later

Her: It means I'll take the twins to the school

Me: No don't bother. I will take them

God blessed us with twins Rotenda and Alexa they are 10 years old. I understand Goldie's frustrations it's perfectly normal to think about your own

children especially when you know anytime you can leave them behind. It's natural to worry about being there for them as they grow and learn or who will look after them when you die

Her: Okay if you need me I'll be at the garden

Me: Babe are we good?

Her: We are

AYDEN

Me: Mimsey

My mother stopped on her tracks

Me: Where are you going so early in the morning?

Her: I have brunch with a friend. What do you want Ayden?

Me: Nothing I just thought we will be having breakfast together

Her: No your sister is here. You can eat with her

Me: Thanks but no thanks

I have a sister Amelia (22) currently in University. My father left our family for another woman since their split my mother has been in pieces. My mother was terrified of being alone so much that she begged for his love she was willing to be treated as less than she is worth. But as time goes she became a bigger person and let him go. When I am not running from the police I am behind the desk I work at Tshivhase Insurance firm as a claim investigator. The company was started by my mother so it's safe to say it's a family business. I didn't really want to work there but I had to do something in order to keep police out of my way I am Ayden Tshivhase (28)

Her: Your father called yesterday

Me: Okay

Her: Is that all you gonna say?

Me: Ha Mimsey what do you want me to say?

Her: Ask what he wanted

Me: I have no interest in him

Her: He is still your father Ayden

I chuckled softly

Me: Mimsey are we really going down that road again? Are you that blind to see that he's trying to fool you again?

Her: He wanted to see you guys over the weekend

Me: You can play happy family but exclude me. I have no time to waste. You will enjoy your day

I kissed her cheek

My mother is naïve and ignorant and that drives me crazy. I don't know how I can prevent her from getting hurt again but if she wants to swim with sharks again who am I to stop her?

YARA

Ethan walked down the stairs

Out of nowhere fear crept over

Him: Morning Yara

Me: Morning sir

Him: Can I have two minutes of your time?

I nodded

Him: Goldie filled me in your little talk

Me: She told we spoke?

Him: What do you think? Yara listen I don't mean anything bad but whatever Goldie said to you it will never come to pass

Me: Oh I see

Rejection can be painful but why am I feeling bad?
Emotional rejection

Him: Both of us know they can never be love between us and I don't think you want to be caged in a loveless marriage. You are a lovely girl and any man would be happy to have you

Me: But that man is not you

The twins made their way to us laughing

Rotenda: Aunt Yara

He jumped into my arms

Me: Easy you will get hurt. How are you Alexa?

Alexa: Good aunt Yara

Him: Are you ready for school?

Rotenda: Daddy can aunt Yara take us today?

Him: Aunt is working I will take you

Rotenda: Daddy please

Me: You will find me when you get back. Allow daddy to take you

Alexa: Where is mommy?

Him: She is resting

Rotenda was still in my arms

Sponsored

I will take you

Rotenda: Daddy please

Me: You will find me when you get back. Allow daddy to take you

Alexa: Where is mommy?

Him: She is resting

Rotenda was still in my arms he is going to protest until his father give in

Him: Get off aunt Tenda

He shook his head no

Him: Yara change into something comfortable you will take them to school

Alexa: But I want mommy

Him: Don't give me that Lex. Aunt Yara will take you case closed

My relationship with Lex is different compared to mine and Tenda. Lex is her mother's daughter

AYDEN

Viper set his gun on the table

Him: Where is Mimsey? If she finds this gun here I am dead

Me: She went out. So is the merchandise ready?

Him: Yes only waiting for the drivers then it is out of

the country

Me: About that do we really have to let those two drunkards ship the merchandise?

Him: Tooth is there anyone you trust with this shipment? We can't ship it out of the country and those two drunkards you talking about have experience

Me: Remember what happened last time I don't like mess ups

Him: Nothing will go wrong trust me. Maybe Panther will tag along

Me: Panther? He already said no

Amelia made her way to us

She was wearing baggy t-shirt the shirt dropped down her buttocks

Her: Viper (Smiles)

Viper gave her a nod

Me: Amelia what did I say to you? I must rehearse this with you over and over?

Her: Chill I was just saying hi I am heading to my bedroom

Me: Stop walking half-naked around my friends

Him: You still at that? Where trust dude?

Me: Hold it right there Viper and you go and get dressed

Her: Brother...

Me: Now Amelia! (Clicks tongue)

GOLDIE

I was on the phone with my mother

I was letting her in on the decision I've made. The family has to know in case Ethan changes his mind I don't want them to outcast Yara

Her: I don't know what to say Goldie

Me: Do you think I am selfish?

Her: You are looking out for your children but no Goldie. I understand why son-in-law is refusing you are asking for a lot

Me: Oh mother what do I do?

Her: You let everything be I am still alive-I will take care of my grand children

I sighed

Me: I am not getting any better if anything I am getting worse. I am getting weaker and weaker pains come and go. It's only matter of time be they find me lifeless

Her: I say enjoy this time left with your family stop worrying about things that are above your ability. Let things take its course

To be continued...

YARA

Right when I stepped out of the school some weird
guy softly whistled at me

I turned around

Me: Can I help you?

He looked at me

Me: And now you are staring

Him: Correction looking

Me: Still you didn't answer my question

He walked up to me

Him: Panther

He extended his hand to me

Me: Sorry Pan...

Him: Panther (Smiles)

Me: Yeah that can you please excuse me?

Him: That actually hurts you refused my handshake

and now you are pushing me out of the way

Me: That would teach you manners

Him: Wow isn't too early to be grumpy?

I looked at him

Me: Panther or whoever you are you don't know me and I don't know you I suggest we keep it that way. You go your way and I go mine. Okay?

I faked a smile

Him: We will surely meet again

Me: I don't wish to

Him: Qaphela ukuthi ungawi (Be careful to not fall)

Jerk!

ELISA

Maybe I am also being selfish instead of telling Yara to not consider the marriage I am actually telling her to go ahead with it. I also have reasons of my own; this marriage will take Yara out of this dungeon. At any time I can die and if I do Yara will

be left with no one at least Mr Ethan will take care of her. I can't put my hope on Mimi she has since left and God knows when she will come back

My phone rang it was unknown

Me: Hello

Voice: When am I getting my mother?

Oh the loan shark

Me: Oh it's you

Him: Of course it's me. When am I getting my money you haven't given me any in the last two months and interests are not waiting for you

Me: You will get your money I promise you

Him: I would really hate to hurt your daughter

Me: Leave Yara out of this

Sponsored

I promise you

Him: I would really hate to hurt your daughter

Me: Leave Yara out of this you will get your money

Him: I lack patience

He hung up

ETHAN

My assistant opened the door

Her: Sir your brother is here to see you

Me: Let him in

Seconds later Noah walked in

Him: Mr architect himself

I am an architect at MAA architects and also a shareholder

Me: You didn't say you were coming

Him: I called you

I checked my phone it was on silent

Him: Don't say it

He sat down

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Should be asking you that

Me: Elaborate

Him: Goldie called mom last night

She did not!

Him: Is your wife crazy?

Me: She is anything but crazy

Him: How do you explain this?

Me: She is not thinking straight that's all

Him: Try telling your mother that

Me: Is she considering it as well?

He nodded

Him: Do you like this girl?

Me: The hell? I don't like her

Him: This is messed up bro and I suggest you tone it

down before it gets out of control

Me: No Goldie is not doing well Noah. I can't reason with her at this moment

Him: Then get ready to marry that girl

YARA

I received a call from Nosizwe

Nosizwe is my best friend she is originally from

Eastern Cape she moved to Limpopo with her mother 5 years ago that's also the period of our friendship. Unlike me Nos is a manager at some restaurant. My friend is really trying to make something for herself

Her: Secrets

Me: How are you?

Her: Ndiyaphila wena unjani? (I'm fine and you)

Me: Good

Her: Jonga I saw some posts on the internet and I think you should try your luck

Me: What posts?

Her: Tshivhase insurance firm is looking for a receptionist and personal assist I've gone through their requirements and you qualify. Ndic'nga ukuba kufuneka ufake isicelo (I think you should apply)

Me: Wow I wanted something like this enkosi minion (Thank you)

Her: I'll pass by your house later

Me: Let me get back to work

Her: Bye

AYDEN

I rested my arms on the table

Me: Did you sort the advert for the posts?

Her: I did sir

Me: Your pregnancy is forcing me to work with someone ha Melisa man

Her: I'll be back

Me: So long I'll be forced to tolerate someone it's fine

She gave me a file

Her: This came for you-the claim of Mrs Williams

Me: I don't trust this lady one bit for all we know she started that fire

She chuckled

Me: Let me take a look on it before I judge her. I'll see you but hold any call for about 30 minutes

My phone beeped. It was a message from Panther saying one of our drivers is arrested

ETHAN

After my conversation with my little brother I felt the need to go and see my mother. Maybe she will shed some light into this mess

I sat across her

Her: Where is Noah? I thought he was with you

Me: He said something about seeing his client I am not sure

She gave me a slight nod

Me: He told me Goldie called you last night

Her: She sure did. I was surprised but I kinda understand her reasons

Me: You do?

Her: She is thinking as a mother and there's nothing wrong with that

Me: But choosing a wife for me don't you think that's too much?

Her: I know Yara she basically grew in my eyes and I trust Goldie's judgement. Yara is well brought up and she adores your children and they do too. Ethan love isn't always foundation of marriage; if respect exists between both of you then I see nothing wrong with that

Me: This is a burden to her imagine having to tolerate me. What about her dreams? What if she meets someone she is going to abandon the kids and put her needs first

Her: From what Goldie has told me I figured she is ready to sacrifice her happiness for this marriage. The twins will need a mother figure after Goldie's death and I don't see anyone giving them that than Yara. And Yara is pretty aware about this marriage; your heart can surprise you. You might fall for her

Me: Easier said than done mother

Her: If not for you do it for your children

I feel delicate and powerless

YARA

I softly knocked on the door

Me: Ma'am are you asleep?

She raised her head

Her: No come in Yara

I stepped inside

Me: Can we talk before I knock off?

She sat up straight

Her: Please take a seat

Me: About your request...

Her eyes lighten little does she know. Ethan wants nothing to do with me and I am not going to force

him. He is not even willing to give it a try do I blame him? No.

Me: I am sorry but I won't be your husband's wife. Even if I want to...

Her: Even if you want to? So you telling me you wanted to?

Me: Yes but your husband told me straight up that it will never come to pass. Mr Ethan will never agree to it and there's nothing we can do

Her: Ethan talked with you? He didn't say anything to me

Me: I shouldn't have said anything but I thought you

knew

She shook her head no

Her: I knew he will never agree but I had hope. And with the pressure... He will never agree to it

Me: Rest assured I will always look after the twins. Even if I find a job elsewhere I will be in contact with them I promise you

She smiled faintly

Her: Until Ethan find someone else. What sin have I committed to be punished like this? My children are still young to be separated from me they still need my guidance and protection. I am emotionally

exhausted no matter what I do or say I am still going to leave this earth and everyone will move on with their lives

Me: Don't be too hard on yourself

Her: I can't help it. I feel like I am going to control my husband even in death

I noticed her hands were trembling slightly

Me: No and Ethan is aware of that. Mr Ethan will never do anything to put his children in danger and I trust his judgement. If he moves on he will move on with someone who will give the twins unconditional love ma'am

ELISA

I was calculating the money I owe the loan shark and it was now too much I won't be able to pay him. The money Yara gives me can hardly pay the interests

I called my eldest daughter

Sponsored

Mimi

Her: I don't have money mama

Me: You can't even try and give us portion of your money?

Her: Who said I am working here? Hay mama

Me: Wow thank you Mimi

I hung up

GOLDIE

Rotenda and Alexa jumped into the bed

Me: Do you always have to jump?

A frown left their faces

Tenda: Mommy why didn't you take us to school today? We missed you

Me: Mommy wasn't feeling well

Lex: Is mommy feeling well now?

I gave them slight nod

Tenda: Aunt Yara bought us milkshakes

Lex: Why are you fussing over that? Is not like mommy doesn't

Me: For a 10 year old you got lot to say Lex

Tenda: I love aunt Yara mommy she always makes sure I am well fed and happy. She is so much like mommy

Me: She does?

Tenda: Yes mommy she does

I darted my eyes around Ethan was standing by the door

Me: For how long have you been standing there?

Him: Long enough to eavesdrop

Me: You two off you go. Go and take a bath before you do your homework

I kissed them

Both: Daddy!

He smiled and closed the door

Him: My wife how are you feeling?

Me: Still alive

He climbed the bed and snuggled me

Him: I see the kids are fond of Yara

Me: It's no-brainer

Him: I will marry her

I raised my head

Him: I am not doing this for you but for my children your death is going to break them into pieces. They are not prepared...

How do you prepare your children for your death?

Him: This isn't about me or my feelings; it's about my children and their welfare. They love Yara and for them I'll do anything

Me: You sure?

Him: I am. But Yara must know her limits; they will never be love between us. She can do whatever she wants but not in my presence. Long as she respect me and our marriage how it will pan out I still don't know but I am ready to give it a try

Me: Thank you babe

I gave him a peck

Me: I have another request...

Him: What now Goldie?

Me: Can you please finance her studies; she has always wanted to hold a degree

Him: There won't be any need for me to do that; she will use the money for Lobola to further her studies. I'll make sure it's enough

Me: That's all I want

Now I can die in peace. Knowing that Ethan will not marry another woman gives me peace. Yes I am jealous of the woman he will fall in love with but I am also acting as a mother. Yara will be the best mother to my children

YARA

Nosizwe was showing me the advert. The salary is good compared to the one I am earning right now. If I get this job I'll be able to save maybe in a year or

two I'll find myself in Varsity

Me: First thing tomorrow I am going to apply for this minion

Her: I have a good feeling you will get this job

I nodded repeatedly

Her: Out with it

Me: What?

Her: Ucinga ntoni? (You thinking about what)

Me: I spoke with Goldie

Her: Finally you did she was being ridiculous. She should be focusing on her husband instead of playing cupid

Me: Nos...

Her: Intoni? Uyaphambana (What? She's crazy)

Me: Hayi wayecinga abantwana bakhe nje (No she was just thinking for her kids)

Her: You are naïve to think that secrets. What she is doing is trying to control her husband even in death

Me: You never liked her

Her: Because she is self-centred and by the time you realise that I'd be too late. As for you madam you will be stuck in a loveless marriage

Me: Now I regret telling you

Her: No don't be

My mother walked in

Ma: My children

Nos: Mama how are you?

Ma: Well and you Nos?

Nos: Reasoning with your daughter

She looked at me

Me: I told Goldie that I won't be marrying her
husband

Ma: You did? Oh

Nos: She made the right decision mama imagine
marrying someone who doesn't love you. Intlekele
(Disaster)

To be continued...

YARA

Last night I heard my mother sobbing and praying. I just hope she is not feeling sick again I don't have money to take her to the doctor

I walked into her drinking tea

Me: Morning

Her: Morning

Me: You look like someone who didn't get any sleep

Her: Just ask why I was sobbing last night because I know you heard me

I kept quiet

Her: I am sorry

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: What made you change your mind?

Me: It felt right

She gave me a slight nod

Me: Is that the reason why you were up crying and praying?

Her: I owe someone money Yara

I looked at her

Her: A loan shark to be exact. I haven't paid him in 2 months...

Me: What are you saying? What possessed you to owe money when I give you something every month?

Her: I wanted some personal things and I wasn't

going to ask you for money. You've done enough for me

Me: So your best solution was to go to a loan shark... How much do you owe?

Her: R5000.00 with interests included

Me: Unbelievable!

(Knock on door)

Me: You are selfish mom

I went to open the door

AYDEN

The arrest of one of our drivers is compromising the mission. If that guy knows what's good for him he will keep his mouth shut

I poured myself a cup of coffee

Her: When are you starting with interviews?

Me: The advert is up for 3 weeks so hopefully month end

Her: And I don't want you to conduct the interviews

Me: Reason being?

Her: How many girls did you employ because of their looks? And did they last long?

Me: Mimsey I am old now I have a fiancée

Her: As if you didn't have one before

Me: You can conduct the interview I don't care just make sure you hire someone who will tolerate me

Her: I won't do things on your terms. We are talking

about my company here Ayden

I took a bite of my toast

GOLDIE

Yara set pot of tea on the table

Ethan: I see you are getting better mama

Elisa: You can say that my son. I was getting tired of going in and out of hospital

Story of my life

Me: We won't waste time

Yara: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine. We are here because we wanted to give you the news in front of your mother

Elisa: What news Goldie?

Me: Ethan has agreed to take Yara as his wife

Yara looked at Ethan and then me

Yara: If I may ask what changed?

Ethan: I am doing this for my children and also giving my wife assurance that her kids will be taken care of

Elisa: Yara has already changed her mind

Me: Yara?

Yara: I did what was fair I was sure Mr Ethan will never agree to this

Ethan: You can't blame me it was a bombshell. I needed time to think things through I couldn't just jump to yes I'll marry you Yara

Me: And now we are on the same page Yara. What do you think Ma Elisa?

Elisa: I support Goldie it must have been very hard to come to this decision

Me: It wasn't easy but I had to be the bigger person and do it for the sake of my children

Yara: Okay we will go ahead with the marriage

Me: Thank you so much Yara. You have no idea how grateful I am to you

Ethan checked time on his wrist watch

Ethan: If there's nothing else we will be off mama

Elisa: You will not have tea with us?

Ethan: Have to go to work. Wife?

Me: I will follow with Yara

Sponsored

we will be off mama

Elisa: You will not have tea with us?

Ethan: Have to go to work. Wife?

Me: I will follow with Yara you can go ahead

He kissed my cheek and stood up

PANTHER

I sat across Viper

A cigar was resting between my lips. I was coming

from dropping my nephew at school

Him: Today you didn't come back smiling what's wrong?

Me: My crush didn't come

Him: You may have scared her off (Laughs) in fact what's so special about this girl? You never chase after a girl Lindokuhle

Me: This one is different from all the girls I've been with brother

Him: How well do you even know this girl?

Me: Isn't about knowing her but what my heart

feels like when I see her

Lately I've been eyeing this girl and I have to say I am taken by her. I've never been one to love and commit to a relationship I've also had my share with girls but none of them have won my heart. But there's something about this girl something that attract me to her. Who would have thought one day Lindokuhle will fall in love? Life has a way to tame you down

Me: Craig there's life besides being a gangster

Him: I just hope this poor girl is ready for what is coming her way

Me: You make it sound like I am made of stone. What's so hard about loving someone?

Unlike me Craig (Viper) has a wife and a kid. He's doing a pretty job as a family man and also a gangster

Him: Let me not say a thing little brother. Time will tell I am sure of that

YARA

I've gathered my courage and send my application. The marriage issue won't change my mind about wanting a different job and I am crossing fingers to

get it. “If you don’t hear anything from us after 3 weeks of applying consider your application unsuccessful” it’s going to be three long weeks of praying

I took the chicken out of the freezer and defrost it; I was preparing lunch for Goldie

My phone rang it was Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: How are you nana?

Me: Good and you?

Her: Not good at all

Me: What's going on?

Her: I need some cash butterfly

Me: It's not even month end where am I gonna get the money from?

Her: It's an emergency; I'll pay you. I promise butterfly

This is proof that my sister is doing nothing in Gauteng I don't know if it's pride or what but if I were her I'd come back home

Me: How much do you need?

She cleared her throat

Her: R1000.00

Me: So much money ha Mimi

Her: Please. I wouldn't be asking if it was not an emergency

ETHAN

I was on the phone with my mother

Ma: You did what any husband would do

Me: You know what's funny about this entire thing mom? It means I am stepping in acceptance I am accepting that Goldie is dying

Ma: Ethan...

Me: I am not ready I am not. Why is God punishing us?

Ma: We can never question God my son

My assistant called my office

Me: Mom let me attend to something I'll call you

I hung up

Me: Hello Portia

Assistant: Sir Mr Tshivhase has arrived

Me: Tell him to come in

I hung

The door opened and he stepped inside

Him: Mr Liremi

Me: Please take a seat Mr Tshivhase

Ayden Tshivhase sat down

Him: Thank you for seeing me; I've been chasing an appointment with you

Me: You'll forgive me but we get lot of appointments and it's a mission to squeeze everyone one in

Him: No problem at all. As I've already said on the phone we are thinking of having another firm just outside town so we need MAA to draw a plan for Tshivhase firm. It mustn't be too different from the existing one. I don't know if it's possible

Me: Anything is possible. What you can do is forward me the design plan for the existing one and I'll see what we can come up with

Him: How long do you think it can take you? I am asking because we supposed to start with building in about 2 months

Me: It can take anywhere from 1-2 months-this is a big project

Him: I'll hear from you

He stood up

YARA

I am on my lunch break. I decided to go and see
Nos; she is going to be furious when I tell her about
the marriage

I sat down

Her: Did you send the CV?

Me: Yes I did. Crossing fingers

Her: Don't stress you'll get the job. The sooner you
get out of that house the better

I looked down

Her: Intoni?

Me: I am getting married soon

The words came as silently as a whisper

She laughed

Her: Stop with joking man

Me: I am not joking

Her: Ingaba uphambene Yara? (Are you crazy?)

She stood up

Her: What nonsense is this?

Me: You don't understand Nos and I don't expect you to understand but at least respect it

Her: Do you have any idea what you are getting yourself into? This is not a joke Yara we talking about a lifetime with a man you don't love

Me: Nos...

Her: Uyamthanda? (Do you love him?)

I shook my head quickly

Me: No how can you ask me such a question?

Her: Then why are you fighting to get married to him? What could it be more important than your sanity?

Me: This is my opportunity to get out of my situation this marriage is my ticket

Her: That's why you've applied for that job

Me: Do you realise I might not get that job?

Her: You are so boring

I knew Nos was not going to understand but this reaction

Sponsored

I didn't expect it

GOLDIE

I balanced myself and rose from the couch

Rotenda was busy doing his homework

Me: Ouch!

I felt a sharp pain in my lower right abdomen

Me: Nana please call daddy

Him: Mommy...

He stood up and walked up to me

Me: Call daddy baby tell him mommy is not well

He ran to the phone and called him

I was struggling to breathe. My throat was very dry

Me: Oh Lord! Not now please

Rotenda ran back to me

Him: Daddy said he's coming mommy

Me: Get me water baby

ELISA

I received a call from Mimi

Me: Now you want my help?

Her: I just need you to talk with Yara mama; you won't like collecting my dead body

Me: Are you in some kind of problem?

Her: Yes and I need money to settle the debt. Soon as I pay this people I am coming back home

Me: I am not promising you anything but I'll take with her. You know your sister...

Her: That's why you must talk with her; she listens to you than me

Me: In the meantime stay far from trouble Mimi

Her: I will try

YARA

I kept on checking time

It's been an hour since they've left but they say no news is bad news. I walked to the garden Lex and Tenda were playing

Me: I think you've played enough for one day

Tenda: Give us 10 more minutes aunt

Me: Don't bribe me young man

Lex: If you are going back inside do that alone I am still playing

Me: Lex you know what happens when you catch a cold...

Lex: You not my mother aunt Yara

Tenda: Ha Alexa I am going to tell dad that you gave aunt Yara an attitude

Me: Let her be Tenda

I faked a smile

Lex: Are you playing or you are going back?

Tenda stood up

Lex: Suit yourself

She continued to play

ETHAN

Goldie was just staring into the space. The doctor took her blood sample for tests

Me: Babe?

She kept quiet

Me: Come on you won't talk with me now?

When Rotenda called me I thought the worst has happened. I didn't want my child to witness his mother's agony

Her: And say what? I am exhausted and I am in pain

(Door opens)

The doctor walked beside her bed

Me: Doc what's going on with my wife?

Doc: Mr Liremi I wish I was bearing good news but Mrs Liremi is showing signs and symptoms that suggest she may be entering her final days of life

Goldie didn't react to his statement

Me: Doc it can't be. There must be something

Doc: There's nothing we can do I'd advise you to let her spend time with her loved ones

Even when her death was expected it is normal for me to feel sense of shock and disbelief

Goldie: Ethan can you please take me home?

Me: Babe...

Her: Take me home

Doc: It's okay besides there's nothing we can do for her

Tears were threatening to fall on her eyes

Me: Don't cry babe

AYDEN

Panther leaned against the wall

He called me to come and meet with him at the warehouse

Me: Why am I here?

I shifted my eyes to the man who was tied up

Me: What the fuck bro? Who is this?

Him: Someone who is going to help us with the issue of that asshole

I noticed a police badge

Me: Tell me you didn't! He is a police officer for Pete's sake

I half yelled

Him: A police officer who values his family right?

He looked at him

Officer: He is right but can you please untie me my hands are really sour

Panther: With pleasure

Me: How is he going to help us? We don't alliance ourselves with the law Panther. Sometimes I feel like you don't think your actions are accompanied by emotions

Panther: It will do you good if you can listen to me

He sat down

Panther: Your loyal employee sang to the cops it's a matter of time before they knock on your door

Me: Still that doesn't explain why he is here

I pointed at him

Panther: He is our saviour. He is going to make sure the case go cold

I chuckled softly

Panther: He is not as innocent as he looks; he got some shady business on the side. So relax he won't change on us I know lot about him

Me: So what's the plan with him?

Panther: He will work for us but first he will make sure the docket disappear

Me: I can't believe we are actually making a deal with one person who can be the death of us

Panther looked at the officer

Panther: Do you know what happens when you betray us?

Officer: Yes you will execute my whole family before you execute me

We never kill innocent people! The hell with Panther!

YARA

I bumped into Ethan in the passageway

Me: Sir

Him: Yara

Me: How's madam?

Him: She's sleeping. They sedated her before they discharged her

Me: I'll make sure I see her before I knock off

Him: That's good. And Yara I think it's time you practice calling me by name sir won't do

Me: Okay sir... meant Ethan

Him: If there's nothing to do you can go ahead and knock off

Me: I first want to see madam then I'll be off

He gave me a slight nod and walked away

I looked at him as he walked away. Oh God what's going on with me why am I drooling? No Yara you need to get a grip! It was never part of the plan

MIMI

I kept on checking my phone hoping to get a notification

If Yara doesn't give me money then I am dead. I have no other plan

(Knock on door)

I got up and went to open the door

Chieka was standing by the door with his guys

Him: Where is my money?

Me: Give me two days...

Him: You've been singing that song for the past 2 weeks

Me: I swear to you you will get the money

I've been working for Chieka as a prostitute. 3 weeks ago I stole money from him I wanted to escape and go back home. I've been living like this for the past 4 years and no one at home knows what I do. I since left saying I've found a job which I did but when I came here I realized it was all a

scam. Too embarrassed to go back home I stayed with a friend who later introduced me to Chieka. The money was good until he started taking it from us; we only get 10% of the money we make

Him: Boys

Sponsored

I wanted to escape and go back home. I've been living like this for the past 4 years and no one at home knows what I do. I since left saying I've found a job which I did but when I came here I realized it

was all a scam. Too embarrassed to go back home I stayed with a friend who later introduced me to Chieka. The money was good until he started taking it from us; we only get 10% of the money we make

Him: Boys get to work! Next time you will think twice before you think of betraying me

He turned around

Me: No please don't do this. Chieka I am begging you I will pay back the money! (Yelling)

Two of his boys stepped inside and closed the door

GOLDIE

Ethan laid my head on his chest

Me: Next week is our anniversary

Him: I will make sure you get the best gift you've ever received

Me: God knows if I'll make it until then

Him: You will I know you will

(Silence)

Me: I made a decision I want to be cremated

He looked at me

Him: Where is that coming from?

Me: I want everyone to get over my death. I want you to mourn me in peace; I don't want my house to be filled with people. People who never cared for me when I was still alive

Him: And what am I expected to do with your ashes?

Me: Scatter or keep them. Long as you fulfil my wish

Him: As you wish

You can never be ready for death no matter how strong you think you are or convince yourself

Me: Don't be sad we knew this was going to happen

Him: It's not so easy to accept

Me: I know

Him: I love you Goldie and marrying was one of the best decisions I've ever made in my life

Me: I love you too

He tucked my hair behind my ear

My end is near; tonight might be our last night
together. But I will die in peace

YARA

I've been trying to call Nos but she is not answering
any of my calls

I threw my handbag on the bed and walked back to

the kitchen. My mother was cooking

Ma: You look distressed

Me: How can I not? Your daughter called me today demanding money I don't have

Ma: About that...

Me: Don't tell me she called you so that you can convince me to give it to her?

Ma: She is your sister and I am sure she needs money for something important

Me: What is she doing there vele? For someone who doesn't want to come back home I figured she

is living large

Ma: I don't know Yara how can you question me about her business?

Me: I am questioning you because you seem like her agent. Both of you take me as your bank; if it's not you it's her! I am tired of everyone seeing me as their God who will save them from anything

Ma: Is that how you feel? Helping your family is now a burden to you?

Me: Don't make me laugh mama; this is more than helping the family. Try pawning me for your needs

Ma: If that's how you feel then go ahead and leave

my house you feel so grown right now right? Then go and live on your own let's see how all of that would turn out

Me: I am not having this conversation with you right now

Ma: Do what you do best walk away. Ndi yone ndevhuwo ine ndai wana heyi (This is the thanks I get)

To be continued...

YARA

Alexa was very disappointed when her father said I'll be taking them to school. I don't know if it's my imagination or not but Lex is no longer feeling me-that's if she ever did

I gave them their backpacks

Me: What do you want me to prepare for you guys?
For lunch

Tenda: Lasagne aunt (Smiles)

Me: I knew you'll say that but your sister doesn't eat that

Him: Let him be

I looked at Alexa

Me: What do you say?

Her: I'll decide when I come back

Him: You are always grumpy Lex and it doesn't suit you

Her: Whatever. Can we go now?

MIMI

I poured water and salt in the basin

Chieka's guys slept with me the whole night without stopping. My phone rang it was my mother

Me: Mama

Her: How are you?

Me: I am good and you?

I will never tell her what's going on; soon as I pay Chieka I am taking the first bus to Limpopo. I won't tolerate his abuse I refuse

Her: It's your sister

Me: What's wrong?

Her: What has she done now?

Yara has always acted like a saint in the eyes of my mother she can never do wrong

Me: Last night she told me where to get off because I talked with her about your situation; she told me how much of a burden we are to her

Me: Yara wouldn't say that

Her: You calling me a liar?

Me: No mama I am just surprised. I mean Yara is very obedient

Her: She has changed

I kept quiet

Her: Did she tell you about her engagement?

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: She's getting married to Ethan

Me: What about Goldie?

Her: A lot has been going on here Goldie is dying. She has cancer so she asked your sister if she can get married to Ethan and she agreed

I don't believe my ears how can Yara do this to me? She knows very well how much I love Ethan but because of Goldie I was forced to forget about him. Ethan and I dated but things changed when he went to University he met with Goldie and things between us ended but I never stopped loving him. And Yara knew about this

Me: She didn't tell me anything

Her: I am sure she was going to tell you

Me: Mom I will call you back there's something I need to do

Her: Okay no problem

I hung up

How could Yara do this to me? We are sisters and sisters don't do this to each other

AYDEN

I walked to Melisa's desk

Her: Sir can I help you with something?

Me: I'd like to see applications for those who have applied already

Her: You know I can't do that

Sponsored

can I help you with something?

Me: I'd like to see applications for those who have applied already

Her: You know I can't do that your mother said...

Me: My mother won't know Melisa anyway I must at least have an insight of the person who might be working for me

She shrugged her shoulders

Her: Okay I will bring them into your office in a bit

I smiled at her and turned around

YARA

After dropping the twins I decided to get myself a snack

I walked into the nearest shop

Voice: And I did say we will meet again

I turned around

I rolled my eyes when I see who it was

Me: Should I get a protection order against you?

He walked up to me

Him: And why should you? You followed me today not the other way around

Me: Is this your shop?

Him: No but...

Me: Thought as much

Him: Lindokuhle well that's my name

I looked at him

Him: You are hard to crack I like

Me: What's your business here?

Him: Same thing you are doing

Me: No I mean at school. The other day you were parking in front of the gate and today you are here

Him: I am not a serial killer if that's what you thinking. I drive my nephew everyday

Me: Mh I see

Him: You won't tell me your name?

Me: You haven't earned that

He smiled at me

Him: Okay I guess I deserve that

I picked potato chips and a packet of peanuts

Me: Anything else?

Him: Well since you don't want to tell me your name what about your numbers?

Me: Unbelievable (Laughs)

Him: Next time you might need help and if that happens I am your guy

I walked to the counter

ETHAN

I walked inside the kitchen with the tray in my hands. At least today Goldie was able to stomach food; lately she has not been enjoying food. Her appetite keeps on dropping

Goldie followed me

Her: You are not going to work?

Me: I am working from home

Her: Any interesting project?

I placed the tray in the sink

Me: Yes Tshivhase firm approached us yesterday

Her: Wow that's nice. Congratulations

Me: It means more work for me and less attention

to you

Her: I'll keep myself busy with something I am sure there's a novel waiting for me

She laughed

Me: Happy to see you laughing

Her: Do I have a choice?

Me: No you don't

I walked up to her

Me: Is Yara back?

Her: Not yet

Me: Okay. Let's go and get you rest

Her: Ethan...

Me: Uh-uh

ELISA

I called the loan shark to come and collect his

money. Goldie gave me R1000.00 to buy some things that are needed at home

He sat down

Me: Here take your money

He looked at the envelope

Him: How much is it?

Me: Enough to make you stop threatening me

He took it

Him: I am not responsible for your problems Elisa;

you came to me because you wanted money. You must also pay smiling

Me: Next time wait for me to call you Biza

Him: Easy I am not the enemy here

Me: Leave now

YARA

Panther dropped me off

I am glad no one saw him I don't want them to think otherwise and besides there's nothing going on between me and him

My phone rang it was Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: How could you?

Me: Sorry?

Her: You heard me Yara. Mom told me about your engagement to Ethan

Me: Oh that...

Her: "Oh that"

She mimicked my voice

Her: We sisters and you betrayed me

Me: But there's nothing going on between you two.
Your relationship ended years ago

Her: You care that little? You are so selfish

Mimi is being unreasonable right now

To be continued...

YARA

I looked at my mother and then Mimi

Me: What's wrong with her?

Ma: Ethan

Me: Ethan?

Ma: She went to see him today and it didn't go well

Me: Oh... Do you think talking with her would help?

Ma: I don't think so after all you are to blame

Me: Me? Ha mama

Ma: Don't even think about provoking her

I looked at her. Buhle was with her I could see she was hurt

Ma: I miss you how's life as a married woman?

Me: Nothing has changed mama. But we are trying to be civil with each other and I am working. And

school is coming along

Ma: Are you managing though?

Me: Yes I am... And you how are things here at home?

She looked at Mimi

Ma: I feel like she is in some kind of danger

Me: What makes you say that?

Ma: These days she is jumpy. She's also in panic-mode

Me: What could be the problem?

Ma: I wish to know

I shook my head

Me: Before I forget here's that money you asked for

I gave her R500.00

Ma: Thank you

ETHAN

I held Goldie's picture

Me: Why did you leave me? Huh?

A tear escaped my ear

Me: We had dreams my love we made promises.
Now I don't even know if I'll ever let another
woman in my heart again

As much as I want to forget Goldie ever existed in
my life I just can't and what Mimi is doing is not fair.
She can't emotional blackmail me if she is fully
aware of my feelings to her. It's hard enough for me
to live with Yara under the same roof I've shared

with my wife

The door flung open. Rotenda ran to me

Me: Champ

Him: We waiting for you the movie is about to end

I wiped my tears and put the picture inside the
drawer

Him: Daddy are you crying?

Me: No I am not

Him: You miss mommy? I do too

I looked at him and smiled

Me: Look at you acting like a man

Him: I learnt from the best

I picked him

Me: Now let's go and finish that movie

YARA

I sat across Mimi

Me: Hey

She smiled faintly

Me: You so quiet

She shrugged her shoulders

Me: Talk with me

Her: What's there to talk about?

Me: Mimi I am sorry about everything. I didn't

mean to hurt you like this but I did it for my future and I hope one day you will realise that. You are my sister yes and I shouldn't have agreed to marry Ethan but I had a reason. And I have achieved that so far

Sponsored

I am studying and working. The twins connect me and Ethan

Her: Do you love him?

Me: Do you want me to be honest with you?

Her: Please

Me: I like him but I think the thought of being his wife curved in and birth that feeling. I wanted someone to love me too but Ethan was not the right person. Ethan has shown me countless times that he loves you and not me. Trust me when I say I will never pursue a relationship with him I will not hurt you to that extent. At first I wanted us to have more than a faux marriage but I later figured that's impossible

Her: Thank you for being honest with me Yara

Me: I'm telling you this so that you stop seeing me as your enemy

Her: I am sorry for being selfish I didn't want to listen. I acted with little information I had and that was not fair. Like what I am doing right now today I went to Ethan and proclaimed my love to him. What kind of person am I? The poor man just lost his wife and I am acting like a bitch

Me: No you are not acting like one. I know how much that guy drives you crazy you once had something good

Her: Truce?

Me: Truce...

We interlocked our pinky fingers

Her: I love you butterfly

Me: I love you too

We hugged

AYDEN

I took my chance and called Chieka. Surprisingly he answered

Him: I've been waiting for your call

Me: Oh is it?

Him: Yes

Me: Panther told me he has been trying to call you but it seemed like you were not interested in talking with him

Him: Because I wanted to talk with you

Me: Is it?

Him: How much do you trust your friend?

Me: What are you trying to do?

Him: Answer question

Me: I trust him with my life

He chuckled softly

Me: Seems like you have something in your chest.
Choke it out

Him: I wouldn't trust someone who once smashed
my girl

Me: What did you say?

Him: You heard me...

Me: Panther will never do that to me. You are just trying to come between us and it won't work

Him: Then ask him what happened last time in Mexico City when we went there for auction

I clenched my jaw

Him: I just want us to continue our business without any hassle and now I think you know why Panther didn't want me to continue working with you

Me: No we don't want to work with you because you are a damn trafficker and unfortunately we learnt that late. And your trick didn't work try something else next time

I hung up

After a minute a message came through. It was Chieka; he sent pictures of Panther and Aurora

Me: Son of bitch!

I threw my phone against the wall

ETHAN

I was sitting in the garden with Yara

Me: Beautiful night

Her: So beautiful. I could sit here all night

Me: And die with coldness

She laughed

Me: Who would have thought that one day we could sit like this as husband and wife?

Her: As husband and wife? (Laughs) it is weird. A month ago I was your maid and today I am your wife

Me: That's life for you

(Silence)

Me: Mimi was here today

Her: She told me

Me: You know right now I don't know if I am coming or going. Everything is a mess. It's like Goldie left with my senses

Her: She didn't it's normal to feel like this but as time goes you'll be able to reason with clear emotions

Me: I feel like going away

Her: Running away won't solve your problems. You must face them

Me: You are smart for your age

Her: Is that a compliment?

Me: Yes it is

Her: Thank you

(Silence)

Her: There's a function at work this coming Friday

and I am going in place of Ayden

Me: And you need a date?

Her: Yes. I don't have anyone...

Me: I'll go with you after all; I am your husband
(Smiles)

I looked at him and smiled

I'll never hurt my sister what I feel for Ethan is not
love but lust.

MIMI

I've been standing in the kitchen for a while now; the cup was resting between my hands. I was deep in my thoughts. How did I become the person I am today from being the innocent Mimi to a prostitute? How did I reach to a point where my life would be in danger? There's a lot going on right now and I don't even have answers to each of them. At any time Chieka can come with his guys and demand me my mom is not aware of things I've been up to. It is going to break her

I felt a hand on my shoulder. I turned around

Me: Mama

Her: Wanna talk about it?

Me: Ma?

Her: Whatever that is in your chest

I faked a smile

Me: There's nothing mama

Her: I know you my daughter and you can't fool me

Me: It's really nothing

She kept quiet

I put my hands on her cheeks

Me: I just want to apologize for disappearing on you
mama I left here claiming to go and look for a job
but I never looked back. I was obviously your hope
and what did I do? I crushed your dreams I let my
sister feed for you and that was unfair of me. I should
have come back but I didn't

Her: You are scaring me Mimi

Me: Don't be. I never asked for your forgiveness
mama and I feel like I should

YARA

I lifted Alexa's leg up and put her shoe on

Her: Aunt...

Me: Mmmh?

Her: This coming weekend there's a play at school and I'd really like it if you could come

The corner of my mouth curved into a smile

Her: Daddy already agreed

Me: Thanks for the invite baby aunt would really love to come and watch you play

She kept quiet and looked at me

Alexa is calmer now than before. Maybe it was her mother's death that was making her behave cold towards me or maybe I was trying too hard to be in her life. But now I am just happy she's finally letting me in

AYDEN

To say I slept well last night would be a lie; I didn't want to confront Aurora before I confront Panther. I don't want to believe what I've seen. The thought of my homie making out with my girl upset me but the betrayal from him is what will drive me to put a bullet between his eyes

When I walked in he was smoking cigarette with one hand on his phone. I leaned against the wall and looked at him I was fuming with anger

Me: Panther

He raised his head

Him: Tooth

He stood up

Him: I didn't know you were coming? What's up?

Me: I am going to ask you one question and I want you to be honest with me

Him: Okay... Ask!

I moved closer to him

Me: What happened between you and Aurora when we were in Mexico City?

Him: Tooth...

His facial expression says it all. He fucked my fiancée

Him: It didn't happen like that...

Me: Like what Panther?

Before he could talk I kneed him in the balls

Me: I am going to kill you

I punched him across the face and he fell on the couch

Him: Tooth please don't do this you don't want me to retaliate. Let's talk about this

Me: You wanna talk now? Huh? Why didn't you talk after you fucked my fiancée? My whole fiancée!

He attempted to get up but I went to him and punched him across the face again. Knowing Panther he didn't let me beat him. He rolled me over and tried to punch me but I moved. He pinned his knee against my chest

Him: We can talk about this; I can explain what really happened. Fuck man!

Me: Now you feel the need to explain?

He let go of me and got up

Me: When were you going to tell me?

I spat the blood on the floor

Him: How was I supposed to tell you? I can't just come and say "Hey man I fucked your girl"

I got up. I did a number on him he was bleeding

Me: What happened to Loyalty? You are my homie and what you did is unforgivable

Him: I was sloshed

Sponsored

and one thing led to another

I pulled the pistol out of the back of my jean. I pointed it at him

Him: Tooth no! Don't do this!

Me: Do you know who told me? Chieka! Out of all people Chieka. I told him you'd never betray me I defended you. I trusted you and now you going to tell me you were sloshed? You want me to believe that?

Him: Can't you see what Chieka is trying to do? He

is working on separating us

Me: Bullshit!

I cocked the gun

MIMI

My phone rang it was my worst nightmare

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath

Me: Chieka

Him: I want to see you today

I kept quiet

Him: Mimi?

Me: I heard you

Him: And make sure you make it

Me: Is there really a need for you to threaten me?

He chuckled softly

Him: You do well with threats

Me: Whatever

He hung up

I stood up and went to Buhle. She was helping my mother outside

Me: Buhle...

I waved at her... She walked up to me

Her: What's up?

Me: We have to go. Chieka called me

Her: I am not ready

PANTHER

I know I should have told Ayden about Aurora and me but I knew he would never understand. And Chieka didn't waste time he ran and blab out

Me: I can never do you bad. You have to trust me it was a mistake

Him: Trust? Don't shit on me!

Me: Now you are not thinking and if you kill me...

Him: The mighty Mzoxolo will kill me? (Chuckles softly)

Me: We are brothers Tooth

Him: No brother of mine will do this. You are nothing to me

(Door opens)

His eyes darted to the door; I pulled my gun out and pointed it at him

Viper: Hey bro...

He froze when he saw Ayden and me pointing guns at each other

Viper: Wooh what the hell is happening here?
Panther? What the fuck! Tooth?

Ayden: Tell your brother to lower his gun

Me: So that you blow my brains? Forget it!

Viper: Stop with this shit! Whatever it is we can solve it we are brothers!

Ayden: I am Ayden Tshivhase not Ayden Khumalo.
You two can go shit on your grandmother's grave; I
am not fucking with any of you

It is impossible to reason with Tooth when he is
angry

MIMI

Chieka's guys looked at us. They were holding guns

Me: Is there need for this?

Chieka: You can't be trusted

Buhle: What do you want from us?

Chieka: What were you expecting when you left without informing me? You really thought I won't find you? No one can hide from Alichu no one!

Me: We are done with this life Chieka and there's nothing you can do about it

Buhle: Yes you won't force us. We want out

Chieka stood up and grabbed Buhle by the hair

Chieka: I make the rules not the other way around.
And you two should have think twice before
escaping from me

He reached for the gun that was on the bedside
drawer

Chieka: This happens when you betray Chieka

Chieka is a ruthless man with no conscious. His
word his rule

He pointed the gun between Buhle eyes

Me: I am begging you don't kill her

One of his men held me back. I tried to fight him but

he's too strong

Buhle: If you kill me let Mimi go (Sobs)

Chieka: You ready to die for this bitch

Me: Kill me; let her go (Screaming)

Chieka: Maybe I should kill both of you

He cocked his gun

Me: I am begging you

Chieka looked at me and the gun went off

YARA

I rested my arms on the table

Sphe: I don't wish to be you right now

Me: I am even scared to go in his office

Ayden has locked himself inside his office. He came here fuming and no one dared to approach him

Me: He has an appointment

Her: What time?

Me: In 45 minutes

Her: Brace yourself and go inside

I shrugged my shoulders

I walked to his office. I softly knocked. There was no response

Me: You can do this Yara

I opened the door

He was lying on the couch. The bottle of scotch was

beside him. Is he drinking?

Me: Mr A...

He didn't dare to look at me

Me: Sir your meeting with Miss Rochelle is in 40 minutes

I stood in front of him. His left eye was swollen

Me: Mr A?

Him: Get out of my face

Me: But sir...

Him: Didn't you hear me? I said out of my face!

I stood there and crossed my arms

He looked at me

Me: I don't think you can go and meet a client looking this

Him: Like what?

Me: Like a scary monster

Oh did I just say that?

Him: I am not in the mood for your silly jokes

Me: I wasn't making one. I am going to cancel the meeting

Him: You will not do such a thing

Me: Yes I will. Unless you go home and change into something presentable and get your eye checked

I walked to his table... He stood up; a glass was still in his hand

Him: I told you to not call

He stood behind me and disconnects the line

Him: You never listen to me why is that?

I didn't know what to say

Him: You are feisty. Your courage to stand against me is admirable. You are not weak like my previous assistants

I slowly turned around

Me: That shows you are not God

Him: God? (Chuckles) where do you find the courage? Amuse me!

Me: Sir you are drunk and what you are doing is really inappropriate

Him: Wouldn't you be drunk if someone you trusted has betrayed you? I should have killed him

Who is he talking about?

Him: I should have killed him and took his teeth out one by one...

I widened my eyes

Him: Yes I should have. I should have honoured my name

Taking teeth out? This man is crazy!

Me: Can you please move aside Mr A?

He pressed me against the table and put his glass down

Him: I loved her but she fucked up. She could have chosen anyone but she went for my friend! My friend!

Me: You really shouldn't be telling me all of this

He looked at me and bite his lower lip. I gently tried to pushed him but he grabbed me by the waist

Him: You are so beautiful

He whispers in my ear

I rolled my eyes at him and pushed him. He lost balance and fell down

Me: I am so sorry Sir

He smiled at me

PANTHER

When Ayden left I received a call from my father he

is becoming impatient. On the other hand Ayden
want nothing to do with me

Viper gave me a cloth with ice

Him: Pressure it

Me: Thanks bro

Him: Why did you do it Lindo? He is your brother for
Pete's sake

Me: How many times am I suppose to say this? I
was sloshed!

Him: And out of all the girls Aurora was the girl you
could fuck with?

I looked at him

Me: You out of all people should know that Aurora always flirts with me

Him: Let Tooth hear you. He could have killed you

Me: He would never. We come a long way. The person who should die is Alich

Him: It's about time. Then what's the plan?

Me: We will lure him and I will kill him myself

Him: The old man didn't find anything on him?

Me: He did but blackmailing him will only anger him. I know his kind and death is the only thing they understand

Viper whistled

Him: How did we reach here? Fuck!

Me: It's a mess

Me: You have to call Tooth sort your mess. We can't afford a crack amongst us

I will try

MIMI

I opened my eyes and Buhle was lying on the bed. I crawled to her

Me: Buhle wake up! (Crying)

My head was pounding

What did they inject me with? The last memory I have was a gun going off but I don't know what happened next

Me: Buhle?

I shook her

She moved her fingers

She is not dead! Thank God

Me: Wake up please

She took a minute before she gathered her strength. When she opened her eyes tears welled up

Her: You are not dead?

We hugged

Her: I thought I'd lost you

Me: No he only drugged me. The gunshot?

Her: He didn't shoot me

Sponsored

he shot into space

Me: What is he playing at?

The door flung open

Chieka: You are awake?

He smiled at us

Him: Now let's talk

Me: Please Chieka let us go! We begging you
(Crying)

He sat down

Him: Only death will save you

I was shaking

AYDEN

Sphesihle walked in with glass of water and pills

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome sir

Me: Where is Yara?

Her: She is out Sir

Me: Okay please tell her to come to my office when she gets back

She nodded and walked out

Maybe I shouldn't have come to the office

I took my phone out and text Yara

| Me- Miss Masia please come back to the office I'd like to apologize for my behaviour. Please |

YARA

My phone beeped it was a message from Ayden

After the incident I came straight to Nos

Her: Is it him?

I nodded

Her: I didn't know he was this crazy. You should press charges against him

Me: Really Nosizwe?

Her: Yes who knows what could have happened?

Me: If he was in his normal state he wouldn't have behave in that manner

Her: Yoh Yara we can't be too sure. Men are after women in all corners of the world we don't know what he is capable of. You don't even know him that much

Me: But he is showing remorse Nos

Her: All I am saying is be careful and if he makes you feel uneasy RUN!

Me: I will

I don't think Ayden is capable of hurting me he was under the influence of alcohol but I understand what Nos is saying. Women are enemies of men

MIMI

We looked at him

"Ghana" we said in unison

Chieka: Yes. You are going to work there

Buhle: No Chieka you can't ship us off

Him: I am not urging with you both

Me: And if we disagree?

Him: Then I kill you and trust me this time I won't miss

I looked at Buhle

Her: Babe?

Her voice cracked

Me: For how long?

Him: You are not returning. That's the price for betraying me

Me: Okay... We will go

Him: Good. And don't even think about double-crossing me again because not only will I kill you but the whole clan as well. I have eyes and ears everywhere and it won't take me long to find out

YARA

I rested my arms on the table

Sphe: I don't wish to be you right now

Me: I am even scared to go in his office

Ayden has locked himself inside his office. He came here fuming and no one dared to approach him

Me: He has an appointment

Her: What time?

Me: In 45 minutes

Her: Brace yourself and go inside

I shrugged my shoulders

I walked to his office. I softly knocked. There was no response

Me: You can do this Yara

I opened the door

He was lying on the couch. The bottle of scotch was beside him. Is he drinking?

Me: Mr A...

He didn't dare to look at me

Me: Sir your meeting with Miss Rochelle is in 40 minutes

I stood in front of him. His left eye was swollen

Me: Mr A?

Him: Get out of my face

Me: But sir...

Him: Didn't you hear me? I said out of my face!

I stood there and crossed my arms

He looked at me

Me: I don't think you can go and meet a client looking this

Him: Like what?

Me: Like a scary monster

Oh did I just say that?

Him: I am not in the mood for your silly jokes

Me: I wasn't making one. I am going to cancel the

meeting

Him: You will not do such a thing

Me: Yes I will. Unless you go home and change into something presentable and get your eye checked

I walked to his table... He stood up; a glass was still in his hand

Him: I told you to not call

He stood behind me and disconnects the line

Him: You never listen to me why is that?

I didn't know what to say

Him: You are feisty. Your courage to stand against me is admirable. You are not weak like my previous assistants

I slowly turned around

Me: That shows you are not God

Him: God? (Chuckles) where do you find the courage? Amuse me!

Me: Sir you are drunk and what you are doing is really inappropriate

Him: Wouldn't you be drunk if someone you trusted

has betrayed you? I should have killed him

Who is he talking about?

Him: I should have killed him and took his teeth out one by one...

I widened my eyes

Him: Yes I should have. I should have honoured my name

Taking teeth out? This man is crazy!

Me: Can you please move aside Mr A?

He pressed me against the table and put his glass down

Him: I loved her but she fucked up. She could have chosen anyone but she went for my friend! My friend!

Me: You really shouldn't be telling me all of this

He looked at me and bite his lower lip. I gently tried to pushed him but he grabbed me by the waist

Him: You are so beautiful

He whispers in my ear

I rolled my eyes at him and pushed him. He lost

balance and fell down

Me: I am so sorry Sir

He smiled at me

PANTHER

When Ayden left I received a call from my father he is becoming impatient. On the other hand Ayden want nothing to do with me

Viper gave me a cloth with ice

Him: Pressure it

Me: Thanks bro

Him: Why did you do it Lindo? He is your brother for Pete's sake

Me: How many times am I suppose to say this? I was sloshed!

Him: And out of all the girls Aurora was the girl you could fuck with?

I looked at him

Me: You out of all people should know that Aurora always flirts with me

Him: Let Tooth hear you. He could have killed you

Me: He would never. We come a long way. The person who should die is Alich

Him: It's about time. Then what's the plan?

Me: We will lure him and I will kill him myself

Him: The old man didn't find anything on him?

Me: He did but blackmailing him will only anger

him. I know his kind and death is the only thing they understand

Viper whistled

Him: How did we reach here? Fuck!

Me: It's a mess

Me: You have to call Tooth sort your mess. We can't afford a crack amongst us

I will try

MIMI

I opened my eyes and Buhle was lying on the bed. I crawled to her

Me: Buhle wake up! (Crying)

My head was pounding

What did they inject me with? The last memory I have was a gun going off but I don't know what happened next

Me: Buhle?

I shook her

She moved her fingers

She is not dead! Thank God

Me: Wake up please

She took a minute before she gathered her strength. When she opened her eyes tears welled up

Her: You are not dead?

We hugged

Her: I thought I'd lost you

Me: No he only drugged me. The gunshot?

Her: He didn't shoot me

Sponsored

he shot into space

Me: What is he playing at?

The door flung open

Chieka: You are awake?

He smiled at us

Him: Now let's talk

Me: Please Chieka let us go! We begging you
(Crying)

He sat down

Him: Only death will save you

I was shaking

AYDEN

Sphesihle walked in with glass of water and pills

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome sir

Me: Where is Yara?

Her: She is out Sir

Me: Okay please tell her to come to my office when she gets back

She nodded and walked out

Maybe I shouldn't have come to the office

I took my phone out and text Yara

| Me- Miss Masia please come back to the office I'd like to apologize for my behaviour. Please |

YARA

My phone beeped it was a message from Ayden

After the incident I came straight to Nos

Her: Is it him?

I nodded

Her: I didn't know he was this crazy. You should press charges against him

Me: Really Nosizwe?

Her: Yes who knows what could have happened?

Me: If he was in his normal state he wouldn't have behave in that manner

Her: Yoh Yara we can't be too sure. Men are after women in all corners of the world we don't know what he is capable of. You don't even know him that much

Me: But he is showing remorse Nos

Her: All I am saying is be careful and if he makes you feel uneasy RUN!

Me: I will

I don't think Ayden is capable of hurting me he was under the influence of alcohol but I understand what Nos is saying. Women are enemies of men

MIMI

We looked at him

"Ghana" we said in unison

Chieka: Yes. You are going to work there

Buhle: No Chieka you can't ship us off

Him: I am not urging with you both

Me: And if we disagree?

Him: Then I kill you and trust me this time I won't miss

I looked at Buhle

Her: Babe?

Her voice cracked

Me: For how long?

Him: You are not returning. That's the price for betraying me

Me: Okay... We will go

Him: Good. And don't even think about double-crossing me again because not only will I kill you but the whole clan as well. I have eyes and ears everywhere and it won't take me long to find out

YARA

I sat across him

Ayden: Thank you for coming back

Me: I work here

Him: Yeah what am I saying?

(Silence)

Him: Please forgive me I acted like a pervert. I am surprised you didn't call the police on me

Me: You are lucky; my friend wanted me to press charges against you

He buried his face between his hands

Him: I'll never forgive myself. I don't really treat woman the way...

Me: You don't have to explain. I accept your apology

Him: Thank you

Me: I hope you'll also forgive the person you wanted to kill and took out his teeth

He laughed softly

Him: I said that?

I nodded

Him: I must have traumatized you

Me: Is that why you are called Tooth?

I've seen most of his things and they are engraved
Tooth

Him: Story for another day

I stood up

Me: Whatever is hurting you I suggest you solve it

without violence. If you need me I'll be in my office
Mr A

Him: Okay

I opened the door before I could step out his voice
erupted again in my ears

Him: I wasn't lying when I said you are beautiful
that was not alcohol speaking

Me: Thank you Sir

I said that as I walked out... I smiled

MIMI

Buhle passed me the pills

Her: They will help with your headache

Me: Thank you

She sat down

Me: How did we get here?

She held my hand

Her: I got us here. I shouldn't have introduced Chieka to you

Me: You were trying to help me

She shook her head no

Her: I sold you and now your mother is going to lose you

My mother! This is going to crush her into pieces. My butterfly Yara must again pick up the pieces and play both roles

Me: Nonsense I am old enough to make my own decisions. A gun was not pointed at me

Her: The things we do to escape poverty. This shows there's no shortcut in life

Me: Unfortunately we learnt that the hard way

ELISA

I collected the stones and threw them inside the wheelbarrow

My phone rang I answered without checking the ID

Me: Elisa

Voice: Yam' intombi (My girl)

Only one person calls me that. Mzoxolo

Me: What do you want?

Him: My daughter. I gave you days to think about it

Me: And I am still on that period of thinking. Have you lost your senses?

Him: I've waited for too long

Me: Says someone who abandoned her. Do you think she would accept you with both hands?

Him: Let me worry about that. What I need now is for my sons to know their sister

I kept quiet

Me: Give me a day or two

Him: A day. And it's non-negotiable

I exhaled

Me: Okay fine. Don't call me I'll call you

I hung up

YARA

I was busy sorting the files on the cabinet

Panther suddenly crossed my mind. I took my phone and called him

Him: Ntombí enhle (Beautiful girl)

Me: Flattery will get you no where

Him: You missed me?

Me: A lot

Him: Maybe I should come and ask you from your husband

Me: Don't you dare

Him: So you enjoy sleeping alone when there's someone who can snuggle you to sleep?

Panther is aware of my marriage with Ethan. My marriage might be a faux but I vowed to respect Ethan

Sponsored

fine. Don't call me I'll call you
I hung up

YARA

I was busy sorting the files on the cabinet

Panther suddenly crossed my mind. I took my phone and called him

Him: Ntombí enhle (Beautiful girl)

Me: Flattery will get you no where

Him: You missed me?

Me: A lot

Him: Maybe I should come and ask you from your husband

Me: Don't you dare

Him: So you enjoy sleeping alone when there's someone who can snuggle you to sleep?

Panther is aware of my marriage with Ethan. My marriage might be a faux but I vowed to respect Ethan before the eyes of people we are happily married. So being seen in any compromising situation with other men will ruin/shame Ethan's name. If ever I find someone I am going to sit Ethan down and tell him about it. And that someone might be Panther I have to say that I am really taken by him there's something about him that I am yet to discover

AYDEN

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

My mother walked in

Her: You are smoking in my house

Me: Mimsey come on

Her: Lindokuhle is here

Me: Tell him to go away

He stood by the door

Him: Not before we talk

Her: Did you two got into a fight? Don't deny
because your bruises gave it away

Him: Something like that

Her: Don't break my things

She closed the door

Me: Panther please leave. I don't want to talk with
you

Him: I am not leaving before we talk. Kill me if you want to this time no one will stop you

I kept quiet

Him: I swear Tooth; I would never sleep with your girl. I wasn't in control of my...

Me: Does that mean every time you get drunk I should hide my girl under the carpet so that you don't fuck her?

Him: No you know me man

Me: I thought I did but I was wrong

Him: It happened once

Me: Did she enjoy it?

Him: Is this a trap?

Me: I asked you a question...

Him: She did

I took a deep breath and stood up. Panther took a step back

Me: When are we fucking Alichu?

He smiled

Him: When you ready

I'll deal with Aurora later but I won't lose my friend over a cunt. He's family and family stick together

Ethan

"It's been a long day without you my friend

And I'll tell you all about it when I see you again

We've come a long way from where we began

Oh I'll tell you all about it when I see you again

When I see you again"

I was lying on the couch facing the ceiling as the song continued to play

Yara walked in with popcorns

Me: You done already?

I sat up straight

Her: Yes

Me: Where are my bambinos?

Her: They are just finishing their homework

Her phone vibrated. She took it and suddenly her mood changed

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I received a weird message from Mimi

Me: What is she saying?

She gave me her phone. I read the message and the message was thought provoking

Me: Why does it seem like she's saying her goodbyes?

Her: Let me call her

She sat down

MIMI

I opened my eyes; Yara was still in my arms. She was holding me tight

Last night she insisted on sleeping over. If they had arrived a minute late they'd have found my lifeless body I was close to gulped down the pills. I wasn't trying to be selfish I've thought about them but that didn't motivate me enough to stop my suicidal thoughts. What could be worse than living as a slave? At least I'll have peace when I am dead

Me: I am sorry butterfly

I tucked her braids behind her ear. She slightly moved

Her: Morning

Her eyes were still puffy. Because of my decisions everyone is hurting

Me: I didn't mean to wake you up. You can go back to sleep it's still early

Tears welled in her eyes

To think one of my reasons for coming back was to initiate a fight with her and now she is crying for me. If I stayed in Gauteng none of this would be happening but I had to be a fool and come back. To fight for a man who want nothing to do with me

Her: Why? Please tell me why?

Me: I can't tell you butterfly. I can't even bring myself to say it...

Her: You've never strike me as person who can be this shallow. Something is going on and I'd like to know. Allow me to help you please

I sighed

Me: No one can help me butterfly

Her: How do you know that? Mimi... (Low voice)

Me: Let me call Buhle I'll tell you everything

Her: Thank you

AYDEN

For us to beat Chieka we will need extra hands and my father is one of those hands. Being a gangster is in my genes my father was one but he retired.

Being a gangster comes with lot of harm and danger especially if you are a family person your rivals/enemies target your family in order to hurt or force you to surrender. And that's one of the reasons for his retirement

I pulled the chair and sat across him

Me: Pops

Him: This is a nice surprise

Me: I wish I didn't have to come here but did I have a choice?

Him: You just missed your aunt and siblings

Me: I didn't come for them but I would have loved to see my siblings I can't say the same about your wife...

Him: What do you want?

Me: I need you to help us take out someone

Him: Who?

Me: Chieka Alich

Him: What business do you have with that punk? I thought you cut ties with him

Me: We did but he is not backing down... He is after us pops and we need you and Khumalo to help us alone we can't do it

Him: What do you want me to do?

Me: Execute him

Him: It won't be easy but I'll try

Me: I don't want you to try pops; I want you to make it happen. It's the least you could do for me for all the shit you've put my mother and Amelia through

Him: So you'll insult me even when you are in need of my help?

Me: You will help us or not?

Him: Just tell me the day and time I'll be there

YARA

I looked at them in disbelief

Buhle: Say something Yara...

Mimi: I know that look...

Me: What look?

Mimi: Judgement look

Me: I am not judging you at all. I'm trying to process everything why did you tell us Mimi?

Mimi: What was I suppose to say? “Mama I am a prostitute and I’ve been one for years now” it’s not so easy

Me: It is! Look now someone is after you

Buhle: We thought we’ve escaped but we were so wrong

Me: Yes you were. I don’t know this Chieka guy but I can tell he is dangerous. And you could’ve know better than escape

Mimi: We know Yara

She held my hand

Mimi: Please don't tell mama I won't be able to look into her eyes. If Chieka ship us off...

Me: Chieka or whoever his name is won't ship you off. It's time we show him that he doesn't have power over women

Buhle: Yara

Sponsored

you have no idea of what you are saying...

Me: Trust me I know

I am not sure of what Panther and Ayden do but I am sure they will be able to help me. Or maybe they will find help for me from other people but I won't allow this guy to separate us. I am doing this for my sisters and every girl out there who is a victim of his cruelty

AYDEN

Panther sat on the desk

Him: I feel like we are wasting time with this guy.
Why are we circling around?

Me: We are attacking him soon. And he won't see
us coming

His phone rang

Him: Beautiful... See us? What happened...? Okay I
will send you my brother's address... Bye

He hung up

Me: What's up?

Him: That was my girl she want to see us

Me: Yara? In fact isn't she supposed to be at work?

I looked at my wrist watch she was 30 minutes late

Him: I am sure she has an explanation

Me: Be happy she is always up to date with her work; I was going to fire her

Him: You are sick... Let's go

ETHAN

I am really worried about Mimi; her actions of last night really shocked me. Mimi is not suicidal whatever she is going through must be hard to take in and maybe I've been too hard on her

I called her

Her: Hey

Me: How are you?

Her: Better and you?

Me: What do you think?

Her: I am sorry...

Me: Why did you do it? And don't lie to me Mimi

Her: I can't tell you over the phone

Me: Do you want us to meet?

Her: No Ethan we can't. I don't want to put your life in danger

Me: What are you saying? Are you in danger?

Her: Ethan I am no longer that Mimi you knew.

I've... I've changed and my world is... I can't do this

I kept quiet

Her: One day you will understand

PANTHER

Viper: And why are you here again?

Ayden: We are waiting for his girl

They laughed

Viper: His married girl

Me: It's nice to see you laughing in the midst of this mess

Viper: Where is she?

Me: She said she's on her way

Ayden: As we wait

(Doorbell rang)

Viper: Go and check...

I got up and went to open

She stood there smiling; her one dimple
complimented her smile

Her: Hey...

Me: Hello... Please come in

MIMI

Buhle: Do you trust Yara?

Me: I do

Her: I am shaking right now I feel like she is our last hope

Me: After our plot to kill Chieka?

She chuckled softly

Me: If whatever she is planning fail we gonna have to kill him

She looked at me

Her: Promise?

Me: Promise...

YARA

They looked at me as if I've said something stupid

Ayden: You said your sister know Chieka how again?

This is embarrassing... I swallowed

Me: My sister and her friend once worked for him
or let me say they are working for him

Viper: You see why I told you this guy must die

Panther: So his plan is to ship them off to Ghana?

Me: That's what she has said to me

Ayden: Fuck me now! We got him

Me: Wait do you know this guy?

I did well by trusting Panther

Panther: Let me say you baby just completed our

puzzle. Guys this it there's no turning back. We got him

He kissed me

Viper: Come on dude not in front of us

Ayden looked away... You can tell he was uncomfortable

Ayden: Let me call Pops and you Viper call Old man. Seems like this two are busy...

Me: No I am going to the office. I will not keep you guys

I stood up

Ayden: Thank you Yara and we will make sure your sister and friend are safe. I'll make sure

I couldn't bring myself to ask them what exactly they do long as they help my sister

To be continued...

ETHAN

I checked the time and it was past noon. Alexa and Rotenda were playing in the garden

Me: Hello can you please come inside for a moment...

Rotenda: But dad...

Me: Please we need to talk

Alexa: Better be worth it daddy

They ran their way to me

Me: What do you know about worthy? (Laughs)

They followed me inside. We sat on the couch

“We listening” they said in unison

Me: Both of you are aware that aunt Yara has been helping us around since mommy’s death right?

They nodded

Me: Soon aunt Yara will be leaving the house

Lex: Why?

Tenda: She doesn't love us anymore? She's leaving us like mommy did?

Their voices cracked

Me: No no! Aunt loves you a lot and she will never stop loving you. She has to move out because it's time. She stayed with us so that we can heal from mom's death but now we have to let her go

Lex: Is it because of me? Please tell her I am sorry I know sometimes I act cold towards her but that doesn't mean I want her gone

Me: Make space for me

I stood up and sat between them

Me: She's not leaving because of you two. She care about you a lot-so much that she can never let anything happened to you but we have to let her go. Isn't what we do for people we love? We let them spread their wings and fly away like birds?

Tenda: Yes we do

Me: So are you allowing aunt Yara to be one of those birds?

"Yes" they said in unison

Me: Leaving the house doesn't mean you won't see her in her new house there are two bedrooms

waiting for you guys. She made sure of that

Lex: Does that mean we can go and visit her?

Me: Yes you can even spend a week at her place. I'll never stop you

Tenda: Pinky promise?

Me: Pinky promise

We interlocked our fingers

Me: Now it's only the three of us

I hugged them

Lex: And mommy...

Me: And mommy she is watching us from heaven

I couldn't help but cry. Everything changed the day
Goldie closed her eyes; she took part of us with her

Me: I'll never leave your side

MIMI

I turned on the TV and pulled a blanket over my shoulders

Buhle: Can I?

Me: You need a boyfriend (Laughs)

Her: Yeah right

I pulled her into the blanket

Her: Where is Ma El?

Me: Have no idea she since left...

Her: Even an old lady like Ma El is going out .But

look at us. We are stuck indoors

Me: If you looking for someone why don't you go out?

Her: And risk finding another Chieka? Thank you but I'll pass

Me: Don't dwell on that. They will never be another Chieka

Her: You think?

Me: I know

Her: You are so matured

Me: Ha-ha learnt from the best

AYDEN

I opened my eyes

My beer sat on the table untouched

Ma: Ayden?

I fixed my gaze on her

Ma: What's going on with you?

Me: Nothing Mimsey. I just need to be alone with my thoughts

She shook her head

Ma: You could've fooled me

Me: Do you want me to be honest with you?

She sat next to me

Ma: Go ahead

I sighed

Me: I'd fallen in love Mimsey

She laughed softly

Ma: Of course you are stupid boy

Me: With someone else

She widened her eyes

Ma: What? So you are telling me that you are looking this miserable for some rural girl?

Me: She's not just any girl Mimsey. She's so

different from all the girls I've been with not even...

Ma: Just shut up Ayden shut up! You are not going to embarrass me okay?

Me: But of course you care only about yourself and status

Ma: Don't annoy me Ayden. I will not let you shame Tshivhase's surname

Me: Shame? What are you saying?

Ma: Whoever this girl is or whatever feelings you have for her I say forget it because she will never amount to anything in my family. I will never accept her

Me: You don't decide my future Mimsey

Ma: What has got into you? You have a fiancée for Pete's sake. So you want to ruin what you've created over the years

Sponsored

huh? Is that what you want?

Me: You talking about the same person who is able to leave her fiancé for months and not give a fuck? It's clear Aurora no longer care about our

relationship; it's the end of our story. And I won't stick around because you love her never!

Ma: Oh is that why you are moving to the next skirt? Ayden Tshivhase listen and listen to me careful no girl will ever step into this house unless that girl is Aurora

Me: That's a crazy ultimatum and you know I don't how much I hate them

I stood up

Me: And you seriously think I care about your threats? I don't! You can keep Aurora I don't care!

I walked away

Ma: Get back here Ayden. Ayden (Yelling)

YARA

I sat on the edge of the bed

Me: So dad told me he talked with you

Lex: He did

Tenda: And we sad about your departure

Me: Don't be sad I am only moving out but you guys will always be in my heart

I smiled at them

Lex: We gonna miss you

Me: And I'm gonna miss you too

I kissed their foreheads

Me: I'm just a one call away anytime of the day

Lex: Don't ever forget about us

Me: Ha I will never forget about you

Tenda: The house will never be the same without you

Me: I wish I could stay but I can't

They looked at each other

Lex: We understand

Tenda: And we know you love us

Me: I love you a lot

They smiled at me

Me: Now let me go and pick a dress for later

Lex: You stay behind. I am going to help aunt choosing a killer dress

She pointed at Rotenda

Tenda: Who said I can't help

Lex: You are guy duh!

Me: Maybe he has great taste like us

They laughed and jumped off the bed

ELISA

I sat on the bed

Me: What have I have?

Things were never meant to escalate to that level. I feel so cheap right now how can I sleep with the man who left me when I needed him the most? Someone's husband at that point. Yara was right I am selfish and I tend to prove that over and over again

Me: Oh God forgive me

AYDEN

I decided to come and just unwind. I don't know if spending the night with Yara will do me any good but that's a risk I am willing to take. Maybe if I get to know her outside workplace will prepare me for what I'm about to do. I've been trying to avoid what I'm feeling but the more I avoid the feelings the more they threaten to explode

I sat at the table with Viper and some guys

Me: Where is Panther?

Viper: He's on the phone with Old girl

I gave him slight nod

Me: Where is the guest of honour?

Him: She will be here soon

I took a sip on my drink

Him: I don't know if now it's the right time to talk
but I am worried about you Tooth

Me: If it's about earlier I am sorry. I was just in my feelings

When he was about to utter another word his eyes shifted to the entryway. It was Panther with Yara and this other girl but my focus was mainly on Yara. She slowly made her way to the table her smile exposed her dimple. I slowly guided my eyes on her features until they reach the table

Panther: And why are you guys not drinking?

The guys laughed

Viper: We were waiting for her

He went and hugged Yara and the friend

Yara: Mr A

She smiled at me

Me: Yara

Yara: Where are my manners this is my friend Nos.
And Nos this is my brother Craig and my boss Ayden

Why me God? Why must I feel the way I do when I see her? Why can't I become numb to my feelings? I'm not an easy person but Yara Masia has taken my heart. The feeling might not be mutual there's no joke in all of this. Yara is the only girl who can tame me not even Aurora managed to. She's definitely one lady I can marry without thinking twice.

YARA

I don't owe my "father" anything but I owe myself recognition from the ancestors. Because of them I am willing to give my father an ear. The sooner I'm introduced to them the better I don't want to experience their wrath

I looked at him

Him: Didn't think you'd come

Me: It was time I give you an ear. The hide and seek game was starting to be boring

He gave me a slight nod

Him: I'm sure your mother has explained everything to you...

Me: She sure did and with that I don't wish to re-hear the story. I just need a way forward

Him: You are really my daughter

Me: It's funny you are only realising that after 25 years

Him: I wish I could change the past

Me: Unfortunately you can't

(Silence)

Him: Your brother told me you are married...

Me: Was

Him: You getting a divorce?

Me: Yes. It's an arranged marriage; we decided to end it before one of us gets hurt

Him: I see

ELISA

When morning came around what I did last night
came back to mind. I once loved Mzo and I'm scared
after yesterday my feelings might be evoked but in
the same breathe he has hurt me

Mimi came to my side

Her: You so quiet is everything fine?

Me: Yes

Her: Where were you yesterday? You disappeared on us

Me: I went to see someone

Her: Someone? I see

Me: Stop fishing news Mimi

Her: But I am not... I talked with dad

Me: When?

Her: Yesterday. He said Yara called her

Me: She had to didn't she? Your sister and drama

Her: He will be coming down

Me: He is not welcome here

Her: He's not?

Me: That's what I said and you better tell him that

Her: I wonder if Yara will share the same sentiments with you

Me: A thina ndavha nazwo hezwo Mimi (I don't care

about any of that) I've had too much drama to last me and your father's drama is the last thing that I need

AURORA

I know what I'm doing is running straight into the lion's den but it's the least I could do for Ayden. This is something I can't do over the phone; I have to sit him down and try to reason with him. Most people can say I toyed with Ayden but I didn't love once existed between us but the flame died. Ayden was never committed to our relationship he tried so hard to pretend but I could see through him. If it's

not the business then it's the girls he flirts with.
We've postponed the wedding three times
whenever it's time for us to get married something
always pull us back

He was leaning against the car with his hands buried
deep in his pockets. I smiled and dragged my
suitcase

Me: Amor

He opened his arms for a hug

Him: Mi amor

We hugged

Him: You looking beautiful

Me: Thank you. You not bad yourself (Smiles)

We broke the hug. He pecked my lips

My body can't miss his coldness

ETHAN

I received a call from my mother

Trust Noah to meddle where he is not needed. He ran to my mother and spilled the beans

Ma: When were you going to tell me?

Me: Just know that I was going to tell you mom

Ma: What happened? I thought things between you two were getting better

Me: They never. We tried and it failed

She kept quiet

Me: I'd like it if the family can support us like you did when we agreed to get married. Yara and I know what we are doing and we both trust our

decision

Ma: There's nothing that we can do/say to change your minds?

Me: Nothing at all

Ma: And how did the twins take the news?

Me: Surprisingly well I was scared for their reaction. They were hurt but I assured them that Yara will forever be part of their lives

Ma: I hope you know what you doing my son

Me: I know mom

Ma: Then I support you

We finally get to close the chapter. My mother will call Ma Sithole and tell her on my behalf

Sponsored

I was scared for their reaction. They were hurt but I assured them that Yara will forever be part of their lives

Ma: I hope you know what you doing my son

Me: I know mom

Ma: Then I support you

We finally get to close the chapter. My mother will call Ma Sithole and tell her on my behalf I know she will be disappointed but it's for the best

AYDEN

The drive to the house was long and quiet. Aurora

didn't engage too much in any conversation I started. She wasn't her usual self but I am just glad she is here now she will have to tell it all

She sat down

Her: Where is mom?

Me: She's on her way back

She gave me a slight nod

Me: You good?

Her: I am and you?

Me: I'm eager to know why you rushed back here

Her: Can we not talk about this now?

Me: No Aurora I don't think I'll be able to wait any longer

Her: Please Ayden

Me: Don't please Ayden me. I need to know what's going on and I suggest you tell me now

Her: The thing is...

(Door slamming) It was my mother

Aurora stood up and went to hug her

Ma: Is this you? Ha you since left us

Her: It's me...

Aurora smiled faintly

Ma: I'm glad you are back and I'm sure you are not planning on leaving any time soon

She ignored her statement. Now my suspicions are confirmed she didn't come back for me or our love. She actually came to end things; I've seen this reaction before. She did it before and I took her back but this time it will be forever. Question is why again?

YARA

Ethan went out with the twins. I called Mimi to come around; Sundays are amazing when they are spent with people you love. Good music and champagne. Hopefully soon I'll be spending most of them in the arms of someone; well it's just a wish

I opened the door for Mimi

Me: Sisters

Her: Am I late? You look like you've already started sipping champagne?

I laughed

Me: After the breakfast date with daddy Mzo? I needed one

We walked into the lounge

Her: Was it that bad?

Me: It wasn't. I actually had a great morning. Seems like I judged him too soon

We sat down

Her: I always tell you to stop judging people. It always backfires

Me: Where is Buhle? I thought she was joining us

Her: Another waiter asked her to stand in for her. She will join us later

Me: We will have time to talk before she comes. So what did mom say about dad?

Her: She is furious. She said he will not set his foot in her yard

Me: This is a mess. Last thing I want is a feud between them

Her: Maybe it's time they fix things...

I looked at her and laughed

Me: You think they will ever fix things? They are old to rekindle their love and if Mzo is around that might be an epic fail

Her: Mama knows better than starting any flame with Mzo

Me: It'd be very embarrassing Mimi. How am I gonna look into my brother's eyes when I know mom is playing around with their father? She must not even start

Her: Why do I feel like this's the beginning of a huge
DISASTER?

I sipped on my drink and laid my back on the couch

ETHAN

Lex: We should do more of this. It's refreshing

Me: Says someone who loves TV

Tenda: This one loves attention daddy. Let's ignore

her

Me: For the sake of peace

We laughed

Me: The way you are eating junk food today I see
aunty Yara murdering someone

Tenda: You mean murdering you? (Laughs)

I felt a hand on my shoulder... I turned my head

Me: Zoe Griffins?

She smiled at me

Her: Ethan

I stood up and hugged her

Me: Wow it's been long. How have you been?

Her: I'm okay and you?

Me: Well I am trying

Her: I heard about Goldie. I'm sorry I didn't make it I really wanted to but you already know. My condolences

Me: Thank you

She greeted the twins

Me: You can join us if you are not in a hurry...

Her: I'd love to

Our fathers were business partners; she's a family friend. We also attended the same Varsity. She moved to America couple of years back

Me: Didn't know you were back

Her: I arrived last night. I'm here for a job interview; it was a short notice thing

Me: You just miss home

She laughed softly

To be continued...

AURORA

My mother-in-law was busy going on and on about how much she misses me and how Ayden was miserable without me. I just wanted to shut her up

Her: You should never think about leaving again. These girls are hungry for wealthy guys; they might snatch your fiancé

Me: You don't say

Her: You have no idea. As we speak Ayden is interested in someone. For all we know he is cheating on you with her

Me: Huh? What are you saying?

Voice: Mimsey can you just stop?

We turned our heads Ayden was behind us

Him: Why are you feeding her with lies?

Her: So you are indirectly calling me a liar?

He walked up to us

Him: Is not your business to tell Aurora

Me: You are not denying it?

Him: Wait up Aurora if there was something between

me and this girl Mimsey is talking about I'd have told you. Okay?

Her: What do I know anyway?

He looked at me

Him: And you can we talk now?

Me: Not now Ayden. Maybe later

Him: Suit yourself

He walked away

Her: What's going on between you two?

Me: I can't even start to tell you

Her: Can't it be fixed?

Me: Can you fix a broken glass?

She shook her head and clapped hands

MIMI

Buhle and Yara were having time of their lives and

so was I. We've already finished two bottles of champagne but we were not that drunk

Buhle: I think we've had enough don't you think?

Me: You are right

Yara: I can't believe we finished two bottles. And tomorrow I am going to work

We laughed

Me: We should probably get going

Buhle: At least let's finish the movie

(Door closes) Ethan walked in with the twins. After some seconds some white girl followed them

Ethan: It's nice in here (Laughs) is that why you chased me out of the house?

The twins jumped to Yara

Yara: You wanna finish me up? Aunt is so tired

They laughed at her

Ethan introduced us to her. She's beautiful no lie. I couldn't help but feel jealous

Ethan: And this is Zoe a very good friend of mine

Yara stood up and hugged her

Yara: It's nice to meet you

Zoe: It's nice to meet you too

I smiled faintly

Me: Buhle I think we should really go

Ethan: You leaving already?

I stood up

I was burning with feelings. I so wanted to get up

and hug him

Me: Yeah. I just remembered I have something to take care of at home

Buhle: You do?

Trust this girl to act foolish. Can't she see I want to get out of this place?

Yara: Do you wanna join us?

Ethan: Zoe wanted to see where I live she won't be staying

Zoe: Yes unfortunately I can't stay. But we will surely have a date some other day

Yara: It's a shame

"It's a shame" oh Yara!

Ethan: Tenda go with your sister and take a bath

"Okay dad" they said in unison

AYDEN

Aurora walked out of the bathroom. A towel was

resting well on her waist if it was any other day I'd have grabbed her by the waist and make love to her

Her: I thought you were out

Me: As you can see you thought wrong

She wore her silk gown

Me: Out with it

Her: Out with what?

Me: I have no time for games. I know what's going on here what I am waiting for is hearing it from the horse's mouth

She crossed her arms over her chest wearing the same look on her face. The same look she once gave me

Me: I begged you so many times to come back but you refused and suddenly you wanted to come back

She cleared her throat

Me: Who is he?

Her: Huh?

She didn't expect me to say that but we both know she is cheating on me

Me: I asked who he is. We both know why you are here Aurora

Sponsored

what I don't understand is why you felt the need to come back and tell me face to face. I just don't

She sat on the bed

Her: Sergio

I chuckled softly

Me: The same bastard you cheated with before. So you actually made a fool out of me Aurora? Not once but twice!

It's true what they say once a cheater always a cheater

Her: It's not how it looks Ayden. I couldn't ignore the love between...

Me: It's not how it looks? You joking right? It's exactly how it looks!

Her: You know things between us were not so good. Love died and we both didn't want to admit it. I wanted some affection Sergio was there and one thing led to another...

Me: And you fell in love with him?

She gave me a slight nod

Her: That's not all...

I waited for her to talk

Her: I am... (Clears throat) I am pregnant (Low voice)

I don't know why but a tear dropped. I don't recognize the woman in front of me

Me: You are pregnant?

I bit my lower lip

Me: Obviously you never loved me the way you claimed. You said you don't want to have kids out of wedlock; you even went as far as aborting my child. But now you are telling me that you are pregnant

Her: Please forgive me Ayden. If I could turn back the time I'd I swear to you

I stood up

Me: Why Aurora? Why didn't you break up with me before you pursue a relationship with him? What was so hard about letting me go without hurting me to this extent? Tell me Aurora maybe I will understand you

Her: I don't know maybe I thought things between us would work out. I had hope but that hope died. And Sergio was there for me

I stood still and looked at her

Me: Is that my ring on your finger?

Her: No

That no came out as a whisper to my heart it was a huge blow

Her: When I left three months ago Sergio proposed but I turned down his proposal. When I realised I was pregnant I then said yes

I kept quiet

She stood up and walked up to me

Her: I didn't want to end things over the phone; I wanted you to listen to my reasons. I loved you Ayden but love wasn't enough to keep us going. There's always something to come between us...

She tried to touch me

Me: Don't! I wanted to be with you I wanted us to build a family together...

Her: And I wanted that too but it was just a dream

Me: You never loved me and I was a fool to think

you love me

Her: No that's not true

I gently pushed her

Me: To think I fought with Panther for you. I defended your honour

She looked at me confused

Me: I know about you and him

MIMI

Buhle stared at me without impression

Her: What's wrong?

Me: Huh?

Her: I saw you at Ethan's house. You didn't expect Ethan to show up with Zoe

Me: No I didn't

She sat next to me

Her: Maybe they are just that “friends”. Don’t take it to heart

Me: I can’t help it. What if he moves on with her?

Her: Then he never loved you

AURORA

Unsure what to say about Panther and me I kept quiet

What happened between us was a moment of heat. Panther is a very good looking guy when Ayden introduced him to me I kinda liked him. But that is not a reason why I fucked him. That night we were both sloshed and Ayden was busy with clients. We swore to never let Ayden know

He looked at me blankly

Him: Now you can't talk?

Me: That was a mistake

Him: Everything in your life is a mistake

I shook my head no

Me: I am sorry about Panther

Him: Are you sorry about Sergio?

I looked away

Honestly speaking I love Sergio maybe more than Ayden. I'd never thought I could love another man who is not Ayden like this

Him: Don't answer me

He grabbed his jacket and walked out

ETHAN

Yara made her way to the table whilst yawning and rubbing eyes

Me: See what happens when you drink too much?

Her: Don't remind me. Mimi is to blame

She sat down

Her: Where are the rascals?

Me: They should be here any moment

She poured herself tea

Her: Before I forget I've decided on the apartment that I want. What's left now is to sign the lease and buy few things...

Me: Is it big enough?

Her: Yes it is

Me: If you want you can call me later I'll drop you off

Her: You sure?

Me: Do you even have to ask? But text me the time I might forget

Her: I'll do so and thank you

Me: Stop with that. I promised to look after you and I'll keep on doing that for as long is necessary

I remembered that Mimi was here yesterday and she didn't look good when she left

Me: How's your sister?

Her: She's... fine I guess

Me: Why do I have a feeling that you are hiding something from me?

Her: No I am not

Me: Yara?

Her: Oh okay but don't tell her that I told you. She will skin me alive

Me: Out with it

Her: She felt insecure with bit of jealous. She was really sad

I looked at her. She laughed

Her: I know it is crazy but Ethan Mimi loves you and I know that she can't stand any woman that is in your life. She tried that with me and it nearly broke her heart and seeing you with Zoe...

Me: She shouldn't feel sad. Our love is obvious; we don't need words to make it concrete

She looked at me and smiled

Her: Does Miss Zoe know that?

AYDEN

I closed the door and made my way to the eating room

Aurora and Mimsey were already settled on the table

Me: Good morning

Mimsey: Ha suka man Ayden do you know how worried I was about you?

Me: Didn't she tell you that I am fine?

Aurora looked down

Mimsey: Aurora is not my daughter where were you?

Me: Somewhere I felt needed

Aurora: Ayden can we talk?

Me: Don't even start please. I want to get ready for work

Mimsey stood up

Mimsey: What's going on with you?

Me: She didn't tell you? Huh you didn't tell her?

I looked at Aurora

Me: Of course you didn't

I turned around and walked away

Mimsey: Hey inwi musidzana wa Mexico say something? (Mexico girl say something)

I laughed and climbed the stairs

MIMI

Yara sent me a message teasing me. I am glad she finds all of this funny; I don't know why I act like a child where Ethan is concerned

Ma: Are you not going to work today?

Me: My shift is starting afternoon

She sat next to me

Me: Care to explain to me what Yara's father was doing here last night?

Ma: Yara's father? You are seeing things

Me: I know that car mama you can't fool me

Ma: He came to tell me that Yara met with him and he will be taking her to KZN soon

Me: And all of that couldn't be said over the phone?

Ma: What's with the questions Mimi?

Me: Why so defensive?

She stood up

Ma: I will not be questioned in my own house

Me: Stop whatever flame you are thinking of starting because you are going to get burnt. You are too old for games and sneaking around

Ma: You go Oprah Winfrey. Leave me alone

I can see through her she's playing a dangerous game and Yara will be caught in between. My mother is drama

YARA

I opened Ayden's door and stepped in

He was standing by the window; he kept his gaze outside. A cup was between his hands

Me: Good morning Sir

He kept quiet

Me: Mr A

I stood there and waited for him to acknowledge my presence. After what seemed like forever he turned around

Him: Miss Masia

Sponsored

she's playing a dangerous game and Yara will be caught in between. My mother is drama

YARA

I opened Ayden's door and stepped in

He was standing by the window; he kept his gaze outside. A cup was between his hands

Me: Good morning Sir

He kept quiet

Me: Mr A

I stood there and waited for him to acknowledge my presence. After what seemed like forever he turned around

Him: Miss Masia how long have you been standing?

Me: Long enough. I was starting to think you are ignoring me

He moved from the window and made his to me. He set his cup on the table

Me: You look deeply absorbed in thoughts

Him: You can say that again but let's not talk about that

Me: I came to say good morning and remind you of the meeting that is set for 10:00am

The corner of his mouth curved into a smile. A beautiful smile

Him: To say good morning? Am I not the luckiest man?

Me: You are the luckiest boss

Him: Am I? If you looking for a raise then forget
Miss M

Me: And just like that my income raise flew out of
the window

Him: Hopefully next time you will be lucky

We laughed

I don't know what happened but next thing we
were staring deep into each other's eyes. The
feeling was intense I don't want to lie

After some seconds I looked down and cleared my throat

Me: I should probably get back to work

He stepped back

Him: Yeah you should. I heard your boss is crazy and arrogant. We don't him to fire you

Me: You are right. But you forgot one thing he is cold!

He smiled again

Me: If you need me I'll...

Him: You'll be in your office

I turned around and walked out

ETHAN

(Knock on door)

Me: Come in

My assistant walked in

Ass: Sir Miss Griffins is here to see you

Me: Let her in

She closed the door

I shut the laptop and stood up

(Door opens)

Zoe: Good morning

Me: Morning

We hugged

Her: Sorry to just show up but I was in the neighbourhood

Me: No it's okay. Please take a seat. Tea or coffee?

Her: Espresso please

I called Portia

Me: Can you please bring us two espressos

Ass: Coming right away...

I hung up

Me: What were you doing around so early in the morning?

I sat next to her

Her: The interview. The building is just down the street

Me: Oh I forgot. How did it do?

Her: I can feel it the job is mine already

Me: You don't say...

Her: You'll be seeing more of me and you know what that means

Me: I am no longer that 20 year old boy I have children and they are my number one priority. No more concerts and nights out

Her: Who said any of that? I can bring them all in your house

I shook my head and laughed

Me: Tell me why don't I see the ring on your finger

Her: Ring? What's that?

Me: Ha-ha

Her: Well I had one but things didn't work. So we called it off

Me: I'm sorry about that

PANTHER

Aurora sat across me

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: You won't even offer me anything to drink?

Me: So you came all the way to ask for a drink?

Funny Aurora

Her: I wanted to see you before I leave

Me: Ayden told me what happened. Not a nice thing to do especially to a person you claim to love

Her: I should have known he would tell you. You are brothers after all

Me: Still I don't know why you are here

She stood up and sat next to me

Her: I wanted to say goodbye

Me: There goodbye. You can leave now

Her: You won't even give me a goodbye kiss?

Me: You sure you are well in the hand?

She chuckled softly

Her: Relax I am just joking. On a serious note can you please look after him?

Me: Ayden is a big boy; he can take care of himself

Her: You know he can't last time he nearly killed

himself

Me: I don't think he would be stupid enough to do it again

Her: But still I am begging you

This girl is crazy for sure

YARA

I set my glass on the table

Me: No no! Rotenda is cheating

He laughed

Him: I am not cheating aunty

Me: Okay another one never have I ever lied to my parents!

They exchanged looks

Lex: I have (Laughs)

Me: Come on drink up

She giggled and gulped down the drink

Me: Tenda we are waiting...

Tenda: I have

We making progress

Me: Drink up young man

Lex: How many questions are left?

Me: Come here. Both of you

They stood up and sat next to me

Me: Now we going to talk and I don't expect lies from either of you

I managed to talk with their Principal earlier and she gave me permission to talk with Rotenda's friend. Well he didn't give me much expect that he has also noticed changes and his sudden behaviour. I also talked with their cousin Mason; he said he has noticed a young boy who sometimes hangs with twins. When he asked the twins what they are doing with him they avoid the question and defend themselves. This young boy is the root of this problem. And the never have I ever game confirmed it. They got lost in the game and I broke the ice

Me: What are you keeping from us?

They kept quiet

Me: Let me tell you a story when I was your age I had a friend and that friend had 9 lives as a cat. She used to treat me well until one day she locked me in the toilet at school

They widened their eyes

Me: Do you know what happened? She left me there to spend the whole day; no one knew where I was. She even went as far as helping people to look for me but made sure no one reaches the toilets. After what seemed like forever she came and unlocked it for me. And she was seen as a hero for

finding me she threatened me and made me swear to never breath a word. I told everyone that I mistakenly locked myself and they believed me after all I was a kid. That didn't stop there she continued to make me do things I didn't like nor want and I kept quiet she would beat me up and take my lunch. I kept quiet but I was dying inside. Until one day my sister Mimi came to my rescue but that was after I woke up in hospital. I overdosed on pills and Mimi forced me to tell her the truth. And I then realised how my lies could've killed me if I had told anyone I would have never thought about committing suicide. Someone could have come to my aid and rescued me. Do you get the moral of this story?

Lex: We do aunty

Tenda: Lies are not good

Me: Now tell me why are you lying to us?

Tenda: Because he threatened to hurt Alexa

Me: Who is that baby? Who is hurting you?

Lex: Shane

Me: He is the one who is bullying you?

Lex: He is bullying Tenda

Me: He hasn't tried anything with you?

She looked down

Me: Baby talk with me

Tenda: When I refuse to do what he wants he force
Alexa to kiss him or touch him...

I closed my eyes. Tears were threatening to fall

What has become of this world?

Me: Is that all?

They nodded

Me: Okay thank you for telling me

Tenda: What are you going to do about this information? If he finds out that we told someone he is going to hurt Alexa he can't hurt Lex aunty

Me: Don't worry; he will do nothing of that nature.
Come here

I pulled them into my arms

Me: I love you so much

Them: We love you too

PANTHER

(Door slamming)

I set my glass on the table

Lethabo made his way to me

Me: Lethabo Okwashi

Him: In the flesh

I extended my hand for a handshake

Me: Am I not surprised to see you?

Him: I did say we will meet again didn't I?

Viper made his way to us

Viper: Am I dreaming? (Chuckles softly)

Lethabo: No you not

They shoulder bumped

Lethabo: I need your help gents

Me: What have you done now?

Lethabo: Remember El Diablo?

Viper: Yeah he died few years back

He scratched his head

Lethabo: I eliminated him

Me: It was you?

Lethabo: Yes and now his son is out of my blood. I don't know who told him but he knows. He has put a price on my head

Viper: You don't know how to stay out of trouble

Sponsored

do you?

Lethabo: Tell me about it. Just when I thought nothing will ever take me back to my old life. Bella being Bella she doesn't want to leave the country until the dust settles

Viper: I can't believe you actually thought she'd leave. Your wife is stubborn

Me: Stubborn doesn't even start to describe her

Viper: And how are we of any help?

Lethabo: You know the answer

YARA

I stood by the door

What is Ayden doing here?

Me: Mr A?

He turned around

Him: Evening. You surprised to see me?

Me: Yes I am. How did you know where I stay?

Him: Miss M I have my ways

Me: Wow

Him: Are we going to talk here or you will let me in?

I moved a bit and pointed at the twins

Me: I have company

Him: I didn't know you have kids no one ever told

me that

Me: You never asked. And they don't live with me

I wanted to laugh so badly but I couldn't spoil the fun. It's going to be a long interesting night. You have no idea Mr A

Me: I'll be back just now

I ran to the twins

Me: Quick question do you still need me to convince your father on a vacation?

They looked at me and smiled

“We do” they said in unison

Me: You'll have that vacation but you will have to help me with something

Both: What?

Me: We are going to prank someone. We gonna make him believe you are my children you game?

They gave me sneaky smile

I winked at them... I walked back to Ayden

Me: You can come in

Him: That took long

We walked back to the sitting room

Ayden stood there and looked at the twins

Him: Hello guys

The twins wanted to laugh but I gave them don't
you dare stare

Tenda: Are you mommy's boyfriend?

Lex: But why are only seeing you now? Where have
you been?

Tenda: Why are you just staring at us? Mommy are we having another Giraffe dilemma

Me: That would be a shame. Mr A the kids are talking with you

Ayden didn't know what to say. He threw himself on the couch

Him: It's gonna be a long night

Tenda: Don't sit down we are about to do something. Karaoke

Him: I can't sing. I don't know how to sing

Lex: Oh do you have a sister by the name of Zoe?

Ayden looked at me

ELISA

I closed the door and took out my phone

I rang Mzoxolo

Me: Why are you calling me? Didn't I tell you not to?

Him: I mustn't call you because your ex-husband is around?

Me: You shouldn't call me because of that. I respect my space as much as you do with your wife Mzo

Him: You led me on and when I need you you are going to behave like a child? You better think twice
Elisa

Me: Mzoxolo I am not having this conversation with you. We will talk tomorrow

Him: Don't you dare hang up on me

Me: I will and you won't do a thing about it

MIMI

I sat across my father

Me: So uhm

I cleared my throat

Me: I see you are still alive I was sure mom was going to murder you in cold blood

He laughed softly

Him: She was furious she didn't want me anywhere close to her but out of the blue she was all friendly

That's my mother for you. Honestly speaking I don't know what my mother want in life and I am sure she doesn't know also. If dad asks her to resolve things with him she might agree; she is one confused woman. If the world was full of women like her men were really going to enjoy making us their doormat

Me: That's how she is

He laughed again

Me: It's really nice having you it's a shame you are leaving soon

Him: When I get back you should come and visit

Me: We will

Him: Tell me-when are you getting married? Your sister already tried that before you

I laughed

Me: Married? Oh papa not now

AYDEN

I made a right choice to come by; Yara and the twins are life. I was exposed to another side of Yara I didn't know and that just made me fall in love with her more

Me: Thank you for tonight. I enjoyed it

Her: We did too

She looked at the twins

Them: Bye Uncle T

Me: Bye. If you ever need anything you know where to find me

Her: Did you really have to tell them that name?

Me: They loved the name

Her: Whatever. Let me walk you out

She closed the door

Me: I'll see you tomorrow

Her: Tomorrow it is Mr A

I stepped closer and circled my arms around her waist

Me: Is it fear I am sensing?

Her: Fear? Dream on

I leaned and kissed her

Me: Good night

Her: Good night. See you tomorrow

I nodded and smiled at her

She stood at the door and looked at me

Her: The twins aren't mine. I am just their guardian
(Smiles) I wanted to test your parenting

Me: Wow Miss M. Well played... so do I qualify?

Her: I'll sleep on it

She closed the door

Yara Masia! You will drive me straight to mental
institution

YARA

After dropping the twins at school I decided to come and have a talk with Ethan. I didn't want to tell him over the phone what the twins have said to me. Hopefully this will give him peace

I sat across him

Me: I am glad I caught you before you leave for work

Him: Why didn't you call?

Me: You know me and chances

He laughed softly

Him: Nail and tooth. How was last night didn't the twins give you hard time?

Me: Never if anything we had great fun. And I managed to break the ice

He leaned forward and fixed his eyes on me

Me: They are being bullied. He has threatened Tenda several times using Lex

He massaged his forehead and exhaled

Him: Did he...

His voice cracked

Him: Did he manage to hurt Lex?

Me: I checked her last night; I didn't see anything but I think we must take her to the doctor. Just to be sure

Him: No Yara! What if he has...?

Me: Ethan No! Don't think about it. She would have told me

Him: I don't know anymore. So much has happened; I don't know what to believe. I saw Tenda's bruises my poor kids

He stood up

Him: What kind of an animal is he? They are just kids Yara they are fragile. Who in their right minds will bully kids?

Me: We will get to the bottom of this

He looked at me

Him: Thank you Yara you are really a blessing to us. Goldie didn't make a mistake when she chose you to watch over our twins. Thank you so much

I stood up

Me: I do it with love; the twins are like my own children. I will die before anything happens to them.

I promised Goldie and I will stand by my word

I hugged him

Me: You have to be strong for me. They can't see you like this okay?

Him: Don't worry about it. I will be fine

We broke the hug

Him: Let me go to school now. This young lattie has to pay

Me: Unfortunately I won't be able to go with you; I have to go to work. You will update me

Him: I will do so

MIMI

Buhle made her way to me

Her: The manager is calling you

Me: What for?

Her: I don't know. Go and find out

Me: Okay fine

I turned around

My phone rang it was Yara

Me: Butterfly

Her: Sisters am I interrupting you?

Me: No we can talk. What's up?

Her: I want you to call Ethan he is not doing well.
Your call could cheer him up

Me: What's wrong I talked with yesterday

Her: The twins are being bullied and I told him this morning

Me: That's hectic. I will do so thank you for telling me

Her: I just don't want him to resort to something that can endanger his relationship with the twins

Me: I will call him. It will real hurt the twins if they see their father hurt and hopeless

Her: Exactly and we don't want that

Me: We certainly don't

Her: You will call him. I have to go now

Me: Bye

She hung up

YARA

I shoved my phone in my pocket. I walked out of the elevator and made my way to Sphehleh

She smiled when she saw me

Me: And that smug face?

Her: I have been waiting for you

Me: Why is that?

She gave me bouquet of red roses

Her: This came for you

Me: Who delivers flowers so early in the morning?

Her: Definitely Mr Tshivhase

Me: You read the card? You so stupid Sphe

Her: I didn't. The delivery man told me I only asked

I smiled

Flowers came with two cards. The first one read as follows:

|Thank you for last night. I wished it never end but all good things comes to an end|

I bit me lower lip and took the second one

|I am waiting for you in my office|

Her: And that smile?

Me: Shut up wena! I will see you

Her: Not even a tiny detail?

Me: Forget it!

Her: You will tell me (Smiles)

I smelled the roses and turned around

PANTHER

Me: Sthe are you sure about what you are saying?

Him: Dead serious. I saw them making their way inside

Me: Thank you man

I rang Viper

Viper: Bro

Me: I got my eyes on the hotel that Old man is in

Him: He is with the lady?

Me: Seems so...

Him: Wait for me

Me: No don't come...

Him: I said

Sponsored

don't come...

Him: I said wait for me Lindokuhle! Don't go in there before I arrive

Me: Hurry up because I am about to kill someone

Him: Send me the address

AYDEN

Yara stood in front of my desk and fixed her gaze on me

Me: You not gonna say anything?

Her: I thought I already said thank you

I stood up

Me: No I was expecting...

Her: Mr A and expectations not a good combo.
Really!

Me: Whatever

I turned her around and made her look at me

Me: You beautiful

She smiled at the expense of revealing her dimple

Me: And she smiled at me

Her: Thank you Mr A but you are making me nervous

Me: You nervous? Now that's a first

I ran the back of my finger on her face

Me: I have a confession...

Her: Confess all your sins I am your Priest

Her sense of humour is out of this world

I took a deep breath and cupped her face

Me: I love you Yara Masia-Khumalo I've fallen deeply in love with you. I wanna be with you; I wanna call you my girl

She attempted to talk but I put my finger on her mouth

Me: Let me finish. I want to spend the rest of my life with if possible; i really want to give us a chance. With that being said will you be my girlfriend?

Her: No I am sorry Mr A but I don't feel the same about you. Sorry if I led you on

I nodded slowly and took a step back

Me: Okay well...

She took a step closer and pressed her lips against mine. So passionate

Her: I thought you will never ask Mr A. I love you too and it's a big yes. I will be your girlfriend

Me: You need to stop doing this to me Miss M you nearly sent me to an early grave

Her: You could have seen your face silly man
(Laughs)

I picked her up and sat her on the table

Me: You are the silly one here

Her: That was my only chance to play you and I had to make it useful

Me: Thank you for allowing this silly man to take a ride with you on this love journey. I am going to love you so much

Her: You better; I mean I have two brothers who will break your neck if you try something...

Me: I will never

Her: But there's something I'd like us to talk about. I

don't know if it's early but I'd like to start with it

I parted her legs and stood in between

Me: Go ahead

Her: The twins I just want you to know that if we are doing this they will also be part of your life. They mean a lot to me and I will never compromise my relationship with them...

Me: That goes without saying

Her: Just like that?

Me: I did my homework and Panther has already filled me in. And I saw you guys last night you share

unconditionally love

Last night I went to Panther after spending the night with Yara he told me everything concerning Yara and the twins. Their father also so I know what I am getting myself into

Her: I expected a little bit of drama

Me: Have you ever seen me making drama?

MIMI

I don't know what's going on with me but I am feeling kinda confused. I feel like something is controlling my mind I am feeling weird because I am hearing things that others are not. When I was with Buhle earlier I told her about the sounds erupting in the house only for her to tell me that there's nothing. If that was not enough I was surprised to find myself in Ethan's house is like I am not aware of my surrounding

Ethan held my hand

Him: You don't look good Cuddles

Me: I don't know what's going on with me. Have you ever felt like you are in your own bubble you hear things that other people are not hearing?

He shook his head

Him: Now you are being weird

Me: I know babe something is wrong with me. I never felt like this

Him: Maybe you are not getting enough sleep

Me: That might be it

He kissed my hand

Him: Let me get you something to drink and I'll take you back home. Fine?

Me: Yes

He stood up... I laid my head on the couch

I felt a hand on my thigh

Voice: Aunty...

Me: Why are you touching me?

I half yelled... I moved my eyes and realised it was
Lex she took a step back

Me: Oh baby I am so sorry. I didn't mean to yell at
you

I tried to touch her but she refused

Her: Don't get near me

Ethan made his way to us

Him: Why are you yelling at her?

Me: I am sorry babe I don't know what happened but I thought it was someone else

Him: Who Mimi? There's no one in the house except us... Now look at her she is scared of you...

He knelt before Lex

Him: Aunty didn't mean to she would never do anything to hurt you

Her: I just wanted to play with her

Him: And she is aware

Her: I am going to my room

What's going on with me? My actions hurt Lex; I don't know what came over me

Ethan sat next to me

Him: Maybe I should take you home; I will talk with Lex later

Me: Babe you know I can never hurt Lex right?

Him: I know but this shout paranoia babe

I know

Him: Let's go

YARA

Ayden walked into the kitchen

Me: Beef or chicken?

Him: Beef... need a hand?

I put back the chicken in the freezer

Me: No but thank you

He leaned against the kitchen counter

Me: But I am not saying gawk at me

Him: I can't help myself

I walked to the sink and rinsed the glasses

Me: You won't guess what happened today

Him: Do tell Shawty

Me: Your mother called...

Him: Is that a good or bad thing?

Me: The latter

Him: Don't tell me she insulted you again

Me: Not exactly she invited me to go with her to one of her Events this coming weekend

Him: Wow that's unexpected

Me: I know right? And the way she spoke with me you couldn't even tell it was the same lady who was insulting me few days ago

Him: Maybe she is coming to terms with the fact that I will never leave you. I mean she has no choice but to accept you

Me: I guess you are right. You think I should go?

Him: What do you think?

Me: I am asking you Munchie

Him: I think she is trying we fought for her to accept

you and it seems like she is trying

Me: That's what I thought

Honestly speaking I was worried about Sophia not accepting me I really love her son and her disapproval was hurting me. If she wants to give our relationship a try then I will try and meet her half way. She is human and if she is seeing her mistakes then who am I to judge her? If I do that I will be hurting my Ayden and I don't want that at all. I love this man with all my heart

Me: I was really starting to get worried; I've seen in-laws getting into battle with their daughters-in-law and it never end well

Him: I know exactly what you are talking about; I

saw that with my mother

Me: Mh?

Him: My grandmother never loved my mother for her son but Pops fought for their love. I saw how my mother cried for her mother-in-law's love and affection

I moved closer to him

Him: My grandmother died hating my mother

Sponsored

I really love her son and her disapproval was hurting me. If she wants to give our relationship a try then I will try and meet her half way. She is human and if she is seeing her mistakes then who am I to judge her? If I do that I will be hurting my Ayden and I don't want that at all. I love this man with all my heart

Me: I was really starting to get worried; I've seen in-laws getting into battle with their daughters-in-law and it never end well

Him: I know exactly what you are talking about; I saw that with my mother

Me: Mh?

Him: My grandmother never loved my mother for her son but Pops fought for their love. I saw how my mother cried for her mother-in-law's love and affection

I moved closer to him

Him: My grandmother died hating my mother she hated everything that was connected to my mother. I never understood her hatred to my mother

Me: I am sorry to hear that

Him: We can't always get what we want Shawty but I never thought my mother would treat my partner like that

Me: Hey she is now trying. I am sure she saw her mistakes and she is trying to rectify them. Can we at least give her a chance?

A corner of his mouth rose into a smile

Him: I think we can do that

He kissed me

Him: You are the best you know that?

Me: I know

I turned around... he spanked my ass

Me: Munchie! (Giggles)

ZOE

I dropped the fork on the plate

My mother looked at me

Mrs G: Are you not enjoying the food?

Me: I am

Mrs G: But you don't look like the person enjoying

Me: Do you think I am lovable mommy?

Mrs G: Yes you are

Me: Then why do I feel like I am not? I feel cursed when it comes to this love thing

Mrs G: You love the wrong people all the time Zoe you need to stop seeking love at the wrong place

Me: I don't

Mrs G: You do how many guys have you claimed

they love you when it's all in your head?

Me: Let's not talk about that

Mrs G: You started the conversation we might as well finish it

Me: Mommy...

Mrs G: You need to get checked with reality you know what happens whenever you start to see and feel things that do not exist

Me: Now I regret asking you that question. How did we get here?

Mrs G: We got here because you asked and as your

mother it's my duty to tell you the truth. We don't need another Roxy Moses and Debby drama this time they will lock you up

I stood up

Me: There we go again; I am reminded of my past. I thought we passed that stage

I ran to the stairs and walked to my room

Me: I know Ethan love me it's not in my head I am not making this up. I know it's real! I am not crazy; Mimi is standing in the way. Just like Goldie

I took the chair and hit the mirror

Me: He is mine!

I grabbed everything that was on the nightstand and threw them!

MIMI

My mind was still tangled to the incident that occurred earlier at Ethan's house I really can't explain what came over me. Alexa must be thinking the worst of me I ruined things for myself. The twins welcomed me with warm hands and what did I do? I became a monster overnight

I rang Ethan

Him: Cuddly

I kept quiet

Him: Talk with me

Me: I'm sorry

Him: I talked with Lex stop stressing yourself

Me: Can't help myself

Him: How are you feeling now?

Me: I woke up feeling better. I think I needed to rest

Him: See? I told you to get some sleep

Me: It must be the training thing it's not easy and it requires my mind and body

Him: It must be

Me: Tell Lex that I am really sorry

Him: I will tell her

Me: I love you

Him: You complete me

Me: Bye

I hung

Me: Why are you looking at me?

Buhle was leaning against the wall staring at me

Her: Food is ready

Me: I am not hungry

Her: You never turn down food Mimi. Something is wrong with you

I stood up

Me: Let's go and eat. You will not stop nagging if I don't eat...

She clicked her tongue

Me: Where is my bag? I think my headache is coming back

Her: Let's eat first

I followed her to the kitchen

MIMI

The following morning I was feeling fine the headache is now faint. I must admit I was starting to get worried but it seems like I was being paranoid as Ethan said. I grabbed my hand bag and walked out of my bedroom. Buhle was already waiting for me

Her: Stop dragging your legs

Me: Ha wena just because you woke up early doesn't mean some of us have to suffer. Yoh!

Her: Let's go

I locked the door

Her: Seems like we are getting lift to work

I turned around

Me: Mr Khumalo the hunk...

She smiled... That's how in love she is whenever she sees Lindo nothing around her matters

Me: Stop drooling he is yours already

Lindo got out the car and opened his arms for Buhle

Her: Sthandwa

He kissed her

Me: Come on guys like really?

Him: Hello Mimi

I smiled at him

Him: Can I talk with you before we go?

Me: Okay...

Him: Did Yara tell you about her and Sophia's latest developments?

I shook my head no

Me: What happened?

Him: Well other than trying to reach out and apologize...

Me: Sophia is reaching out to my sister?

Me: Yes

Buhle: Isn't that a good thing?

Me: Good and bad but I don't want to discourage Yara. We will see how far she will keep her acting

because I smell lies. Unless she has really changed

Him: We will be waiting for her

Me: It has always been my wish for my sister to get married in a family that is caring and loving. Trauma that comes with monster-in-law is too much and my baby sister won't be able to handle such. She will literally be broken she won't survive

AYDEN

My mother walked in my bedroom just after I

closed it

Her: Morning

Me: Mimsey

Her: You are only coming back now?

I threw my jacket on the couch

Me: Yes and I need to get ready for work

She sat on the edge of the bed

Me: I heard you called Yara

Her: I did...

Me: Thank you Mimsey it really means a lot to know that you are trying to reach out to her. She was really happy; all she ever wanted was just simple thing. You accepting her

Her: Anything for you son. I just want to see you happy and you know I will do anything for your happiness

Me: I know and I promise you you will not regret your decision. You are going to love Yara

Her: I am sure I will

YARA

Ethan was telling me about Mimi's behaviour which I find it hard to believe. Mimi is nothing like what Ethan is saying right now

Me: Are you not exaggerating?

Him: I am not. She acted completely out of character

Me: That doesn't sound like Mimi

Him: But when I spoke with her this morning she sounded better than yesterday

Me: And Lex how is she?

Him: You know her and after that bullying situation I am scared she will distance herself

My sister doesn't need that...

Me: That's the last thing we need. If the twins start to hate Mimi it will only mean one thing...

Him: My relationship with her will be doomed. I know and I don't want that to happen

Me: Let's believe it was a once off thing. The twins

will see that Mimi doesn't hate them

Him: You are right

MUNEI

I looked around before making my way down the stairs

Sophia: You can come down Ayden has left

I walked up to her

Me: This hiding and seek game is starting to bore me. Can we start already with whatever plan you have?

Her: Just give me few more days. There won't be need for this

Me: I can't wait

I took cup of coffee from her

Me: Thank you

Her: I never asked; do you have a boyfriend?

I sat down

Me: Not at the moment. Do you seriously think I would be here if I had one? Come on Sophia I am not that sleazy

Her: I was not trying to insult you if that's what you are thinking

Me: It doesn't matter. I just can't wait to get piece of that son of yours

Her: At least respect me we are talking about my son

I chuckled

Me: You are still going to hear juicy details

Her: I rather not. I just wanna see the results
nothing more nothing less

I stood up

Me: You are indeed the Devil's daughter

AYDEN

I stood at the door and looked at Yara. She was busy

typing on her computer; her braids are tied into a nice bun. She looked so beautiful sight to sore eyes. So much that I wish I could get inside there and tore her clothes apart whilst exclaiming my love to her. Mh with that thought I am thinking of planning something romantic for us. I love this woman so much and there's nothing I want than being inside of her whilst she moan my name

I laughed softly and walked back to my office... My phone rang it was Mimsey

Me: Mimsey

Her: Son I hope I am not disturbing you

Me: No you not. You want something?

Her: Tonight I'd like to host you and Yara. Do you think you would be able to come?

Me: Should I be worried?

Her: Yoh

Sponsored

I can't even do a nice gesture without you suspecting me of something bad?

Me: You can't blame you are full of tricks. And when

it comes to Yara I will always double check get use to that

Her: Well you will be pleased to know that I am not planning anything sinister. If she wants she can come with someone from her family maybe that way she will be comfortable

Me: I will let her know

Her: Wonderful. Let me not keep you have a great day

Me: You too Mimsey. And thank you

Her: Don't mention it

She hung up

Yara looked very happy when she was telling me about my mother's attempts to make peace with her I never realised how much she wanted my mother's love until she talked about her reaching out. I could hear from her voice that she is excited. I guess it's every girl's dream to be close with their mother-in-laws and my girl is one of those girls

ETHAN

The door opened

Me: Portia I asked not to be disturbed

I raised my head

Me: Zoe?

Her: Yes and sorry for interrupting you

Me: Come in it's always fun to see you

I shut my laptop

Her: Don't blame your Assistant I twisted her arm. I wanted to see you

I laughed

Me: Please seat down

Her: Thank you

Me: You are hardly at the office are you sure you are doing the job you are paid for?

She chuckled softly

Her: I am. It's been days since I saw you that's why I am here

Me: I am a bad friend right?

Her eyes darkened

Her: Ethan you are going to pretend until when?

Me: I don't think I understand

Her: This! The love between us are you not feeling anything?

I am really lost now!

Her: I can't pretend anymore Ethan; you know I never saw you as a friend. Yes at first I did but as time goes things between us changed

Me: But I see you as a friend a very good one at that point

Her: There's always someone in my way that's why you don't want to admit to your feelings. First it was Goldie now it's Mimi

Me: Zoe there's nothing between us and they will never be something

Her: You are lying to yourself

She stood up and walked up to me. She turned the chair and made me look at her

Her: Remember that night? What we shared what magical

Me: We were playing a game it was a stupid game.

We would have never kissed if it wasn't of that game. And we were like what 21 y/o? Come on!

Her: No you are lying. I know you love me Ethan.
You love me!

She leaned and tried to kiss me

Me: Stop!

I pushed her

Me: Stay away from me you are crazy! You are not my friend; my friend will never behave like this

She wiped her tears

What the hell is going on? I've known Zoe for years but I don't recognize the person who is in front of me

Me: Leave my office now and don't ever think about coming back. Stay away from me and Mimi (Shouts) go with your craziness!

Her: You don't mean that

Me: I said leave! You are sick...

She grabbed her bag and took out a knife

Her: You love me and I know it... you just need to accept it and we will be happy

She pressed the knife on her neck

Me: Zoe drop the knife

ETHAN

It was a mission and half to calm Zoe down; I've

never seen anything of that kind. She literally threw my things around she acted like a crazy person and for a moment I was scared. Not for me but for her. I ended calling her parents but when they arrived the damage was already done. She had hurt herself...

Mrs G sat across me... She ran her eyes around the office

Mrs G: I am really sorry Ethan

Me: Why didn't you say anything to me? She is my friend; you were supposed to let me know Mrs Griffins

Mrs G: I didn't think it was necessary she told me she was taking her medication. And the symptoms were not showing anymore

She told me about Zoe's condition shocked doesn't even start to explain the situation. I mean she doesn't look like someone who is unstable to think I even defended her when Mimi pointed it out

Mrs G: We will make sure she gets help. I am sorry again Ethan

Me: Please do that because what I saw was very unpleasing

Mrs G: In the meantime please try to not have any sort of communication with her. Even if she tries to get your attention she must get professional help first

Me: I will keep that in mind

She grabbed her purse and stood up

Mrs G: I am sorry again

I nodded slowly

She walked out

Me: What a mess!

I looked at the mess in my office. I need to tell Mimi about this

PANTHER

I kept my eyes on the road with one hand on the wheel and the other one on Buhle's thigh

Her: I have to be heading back now

Me: Oh that's a shame

Her: You will get bored of me if you keep me by your side all the time

I chuckled softly

Me: Never. What makes you say that?

I parked at the parking lot and stared deep into her eyes

Me: You haven't answered me Sunshine

Her: How serious are you about us?

Me: Serious to send my people to your family tomorrow if possible

She laughed softly

Her: Quit joking Sthandwa

Me: You see me laughing?

Her: No but...

Me: No buts. I am old Sunshine and I don't see myself toying with you. I've seen it all when it comes to relationships and settling down is the right word for me right now

I held her hand

Me: If that word come with your name then why not? I love you Sunshine and there's too much heat between us...

Her: With the life that you live do you think all of that is possible?

I looked away

Her: Answer me

Me: What I do is dangerous I won't lie it comes with lot of danger but in the midst of all that I stand to protect my loved ones. I will rather die than let anything happened to them

Fear was written all over her face

Me: You don't have to get scared because for as long as I live no danger will come your way. Do you trust me?

Her: I trust you

Me: That's all I needed to hear

ETHAN

Mimi's eyes shifted forth and back not sure of what to say... She shook her head slightly

Her: But I told you Cuddly

Me: You did but you can't blame me. She has always shown me sane side

Her: That's what they do I never believed it. She was just too good to be true! For all we know she poisoned me yester...

We looked at each other

"You think?" we asked in unison

Me: I'll be damned

Her: Come to think of it I started feeling weird hours after our brunch. But how? I was with her the whole time I never left her side. Even when the waitress served us drinks I didn't see anything unusual from Zoe's side

Me: If she was adamant about hurting you then she must have organised something without you realising it

Her: That bitch! I will kill her when I see her I swear...

Me: Cuddles your choice of words

Her: It's all your fault suka and now you are telling me about choice of words. You will get us killed one day you are too nice Ethan

Me: I already apologized

Her: You are not forgiven

Me: I will keep on apologizing then

Her: Whatever!

YARA

I walked into Ayden polishing his gun. I stood at the door and looked at him

Me: You never told me what is it you do with my brothers?

Him: You never asked and I never told you

Honestly speaking I don't know anything about their side job apart from their names. Which I heard goes side by side with their character

Me: Then tell me

Him: No will do

Me: I wanna know

Him: What will happen after knowing?

Me: Nothing I will just know

Him: Just know that I live by the gun my life revolve around this

He looked at his gun

Me: So you are indirectly saying that one day I can wake up and hear that you are dead?

Him: Yes

Me: Just like that?

He put the gun on the bed and stood up

Him: What do you want me to say? I can never lie to you

Me: Is not something you hear everyday

Him: I've known guns all my life; they are part of me
Shawty

Me: You live by the sword you die by the sword...

He circled his arms around my waist

Him: Let's not stress about that now can we?

Me: Do I have a choice?

Him: You do but I am asking nicely

He kissed me

Him: Ready to go?

Me: Yes

ZOE

I was curled up in the corner of the room

The psychiatrist looked and me

Psychiatrist: Zoe?

I kept quiet

Psychiatrist: You need to take your pills

Me: This is not over

Sponsored

it far from over! It is far (Whispers)

All of them think they have casted me out but oh

boy! They are not ready for my comeback! I will make them pay I swear... Mimi will regret turning Ethan against me. I might not need that file after all I will go straight to kill her

My mother walked in the room

Mrs G: How is she?

Psychiatrist: She is refusing medication; we will be forced to inject her

Mrs G: Do whatever it takes. And if it's possible can she stay here maybe two months?

Psychiatrist: It will depend on her progress

Mrs G: I don't recognize my own daughter I mean
looked at her

Psychiatrist: Don't worry she will be fine. Zoe just
need to make room for rejection if she start with
that then everything will be fine

Even my own mother has turned her back on me!
All of them did! All because of one person

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I was busy setting up the table. It's going to be one

long night tolerating this people is going to exhaust me. I heard she is coming with her sister

I took a sip from my wine

Voice: Mimsey

I turned around; it was Ayden with the girl

Time to act for mother-in-law of the year

Me: Son (Smiles)

I hugged him

Me: Yara you look beautiful

No lie about that she's really looking beautiful.
Ayden must have chipped in for her to look this
dazzling

Her: Thank you Mrs Tshivhase. I brought this for you

She gave me bottle of Wine my favourite at that
point. Wow she is impressing and I have to say that
I am taken

Me: Thank you how did you know this is my
favourite?

She looked at Ayden and smiled

Him: Guilty as charged

Me: Well thank you. I am adding it to my cabinet for special occasions

I hugged her

Him: Let me go and start fire

Me: Go ahead son

He kissed my cheek

Him: I love you

Her: I lost my heart on you

They kissed... I cleared my throat

Him: See you...

Her: Do you need help with anything?

Me: I was just finishing up

Her: I can help if you don't mind...

Me: Please...

We walked into the kitchen

(Doorbell rang)

Her: Must be my sister

Me: You can go ahead and open the door for her

She disappeared to the lounge

Now let's see the sister... I took out two glasses I don't even know if these rural girls know Wine or not... Seconds later Yara walked in with this beautiful dark girl. She doesn't reflect Yara's image but you can't miss their eyes. She dropped her purse on the chair and looked at me

Yara: Mimi meet Ayden's mom Mrs Tshivhase meet my sister

Me: Nice meeting you

Mimi: Wish I could say the same about you Sophia

Me: I guess you've heard lot about me given your attitude

Mimi: Unfortunately...

Me: Okay fine... Would you like Wine or juice?

Mimi looked at her sister

Mimi: White wine if you have please

What? Okay maybe I judged the sister quickly

ETHAN

Goldie made a choice to choose the woman who will look after her children when she passed on and I was part of that choice. I gave her my word that her children will be taken care off and now I feel like I've went back on my word. If my children are hurting like this what does that make of me? Yara also has a life and she can't always be with my children but they are too young to understand that. I couldn't have prevented her from getting pregnant and it never occurred to me that the twins will feel left out and unwanted

I parked my car at the gate. I got out and stepped

inside the yard

Me: Ndi masiari mama (Afternoon)

I greeted Mimi's mother who was sitting in the veranda

Her: Masiari a vhudi mutukana wanga (Good afternoon my son)

Me: Ndi nga kona u vhoni Mimi? (Can I see Mimi?)

Her: Unga ngomu ni nga khokhonya munangoni (She is inside you can knock on the door)

I nodded and climbed the stoop

I knocked on the door Buhle opened the door

Her: Ethan hello

Me: Hello

Her: Please come in... Mimi you have a visitor
(Shouts) please sit down

I walked over and sat on the couch

Me: Thank you

“Cuddles you didn’t say you were coming” she said
standing at the passageway

Buhle: I am leaving I will see you

Mimi: Okay bye

Buhle: Bye Ethan

I waved at her

Mimi: You are so quiet what's wrong?

She said next to me

Me: I wanted to see you

I sighed loudly

Me: The twins are not okay and I don't even know what to do. I feel like I am failing as a parent

Her: What happened?

I narrated the whole story

Her: Wow I don't know what to say cuddles this is too deep and Yara has to know

Me: Yeah I am going to let her know

Her: Come to think of it I did have a talk with Lex some time back and I thought she was just playing when she said Yara is neglecting them

Me: I think the baby issue is adding fuel to the flame and I don't want Yara to feel bad as well. This is her first child and she has every right to bond with him/her and her boyfriend need her. She can't handle all of this alone

Her: Look at me...

I looked at her she cupped my face

Her: It is her first child but she also made a promise to Goldie and she will never forget that. Yara just need to talk and assure them that they will forever be in her life. And the baby will never change that. They have to know Ethan

Me: I know

AYDEN

Mimsey asked me to accompany her to the building and inspect the progress. These people have been here for almost a month and weeks and they are not showing signs of finishing

We walked around the building

Her: MAA architects knew what they were doing; I mean not even our current building looks like this

Me: You are right; Ethan went overboard with the

design. I did right by going to them

She nodded as we continued to walk around

Constructor: Good day Mr and Mrs Tshivhase

Her: Good day I like what I see. You are doing a great job

Constructor: We are just doing our job and following a design ma'am

Me: Still thank you you were highly recommended and you are building it exactly as it is in the plan

Her: I was not very sure about them but I can see I was wrong

Me: You like to judge Mimsey

She looked at the constructor

Her: When do you think you can be done? We were supposed to start operating this coming month

Constructor: The problem was with the suppliers next week was supposed to be our last week here

Me: Time is money and what is happening here is costing us

Her: My son is right you are taking too long and we don't have money to keep us. We are losing money

Constructor: We know and we apologize for that

Sponsored

my team and I will work hard and fast. We should be done in two weeks

Me: Don't mess things whilst rushing

Constructor: We won't

Her: You can go back to work

She picked the bricks and set them aside

Her: I was thinking...

Me: That's dangerous

Her: Not this time... I was thinking of giving Yara another position when are done with this firm. She can move with the new team and work in this new firm

I looked at her

Her: She can't be your assistant forever and she is very intelligent and a hard worker whilst she finishes her degree we can promote her. This firm is going to need people who are passionate and hard

workers and Yara is one of them. I am sure working with you by her side has given her an insight about insurance as a whole

Me: Are you trying to steal my assistant?

Her: I am giving her an opportunity do something she has potential Ayden and you will be stupid to deny her that

Me: If you put it like that...

Her: I know what I am talking about

BUHLE

Later on Lindo called and asked to have lunch with me he also hinted that there's something he want us to talk about. I don't know what to expect right now

I took off my clothes and put on his shirt

Him: You look sexy

I blushed and smiled at him

Him: Let's go and prepare something to eat

Me: I thought we were going to talk first

Him: No we need to eat first. Or you want me to eat you first?

He ran his hand on my arse

Me: In your dreams

Him: The way you are starving me

Me: Excuse you; do you want me to start counting?

Him: No don't

Me: I thought as much

He squeezed my arse and kissed my neck

Him: I need to make a phone call first

Me: Let me go and defrost the chicken

Him: Okay

I closed the door and walked to the kitchen

I took out the chicken out of the freezer and put it inside the micro oven

Me: "Taking them off 'cause I feel a fool

Try'na dress up when I missing you

Imma step out of the lingerie

Curl up in a ball with something Hanes

In bed I lay

With nothing but your t-shirt on"

I softly sang whilst doing some moves

I felt eyes on me

Me: Staring is rude

Him: I can't help me the way you are moving those hips God!

I turned around

Me: Pervert!

He attempted to walk but he bumped into a kitchen table

Me: Watch where you are going you will hurt yourself

He closed his eyes and opened them again

Him: I am okay

Me: Come and sit down

He ran his eyes around but seemed as if he has no idea of which direction to go to

Me: Sthandwa come

I extended my hand

He ignored it

Him: Ouch Buhle I am... I am losing my sight

I laughed softly

Me: Now it's not time for jokes Lindo

I walked up to him before I could touch him he passed out

Me: Oh my God! Lindo get up this is not funny. Lindo!

I reached for my phone and called his brother

Me: Can you please come to the house? Lindo fainted he is not breathing

Him: What? I am on my way check for his doctor's number inside the drawer and tell him we are on our way

Doctor? What the fuck is going on here?

Him: Did you hear me Buhle?

Me: Yes I did (Stammers)

I hung

Me: Lindo whatever it is please don't die on me

I kissed his forehead and ran to the lounge

VIPER

Soon as Buhle hang up I called my father

Me: Dad where are you?

Old man: At the house

Me: Lindo fainted his girlfriend called me now

Old man: How is he?

Me: I don't know; I am going there now. Go to the hospital we will meet there

Old man: Hurry Craig please. If you arrive before the

ambulance take him there don't wait for them

Me: Okay father

I hung up and ran out

To be continued...

VIPER

We haven't said anything to Buhle; I honestly can't break the news to her

Yara sat next to her

Buhle: What's going on Yara?

Yara: Buhle Lindo has cancer

She laughed and looked at Yara

Buhle: What's with the jokes today?

Yara: I am not

Buhle's eyes darkened

Buhle: What are you saying? Is he dying? Tell me something

Yara: I ask that you become strong; Lindo is strong and full of life. Don't be distress

Buhle: Oh sweet Jesus please don't take him

Yara: He won't

Buhle: This is what he wanted to tell me? But why didn't he when he got the diagnose he must have felt alone and miserable

Me: He wanted to tell you trust me but he didn't know how. He didn't want you to stress

Old man waved at us

Yara: You wanna go with us inside to talk with the doctor?

Buhle: No you will find me here

Yara: Okay

We walked to the doctor's office

Yara: Ayden couldn't come; he said he will see you later

Me: No stress

BUHLE

I was on a call with Mimi

Her: Do you want me to come there?

Me: No don't stress yourself

Her: I am not

Me: I should be home soon; the doctor is not allowing us to see him so staying here is pointless. I need to rest and regain strength; Lindo can't see me like this

Her: I still don't believe Lindo kept this; I mean this is huge...

Me: I don't care about any of that; I am more worried about his mental state. I can't even start to imagine how he was feeling all this time; he didn't show any signs of pain. He laughed with a broken heart; he wanted to be strong for us and forgot about himself

Her: He will bounce from this; he is stronger than you think. And his family is going to make sure he

gets the best doctors to help him they are going to help him. Don't stress too much we will also pray for him

Me: You are right

Her: Where are they now?

Me: They are talking with the doctor; I couldn't go inside with them. His father scares me

She laughed softly

Her: I know what you are talking about. Praying for good news

I checked the time on my wrist watch

Me: I'll see you soon I am coming back

Her: Okay kisses...

I hung up

I shoved my phone in my pocket and ran my eyes to the doctor's office

YARA

The neurosurgeon was enlightening us about the whole thing what to expect and why Lindo suddenly lost his sight

This thing is becoming scarier than I thought and I am starting to get worried

Old man: Is it normal for him to lose his sight? I mean how is it possible?

Doctor Masango: Brain tumours affect ones vision such as double and blurred vision. All of this happens when tumour places pressure on a certain area of the brain. What we are going to do know is referring you to an eye expert; he will give you more information

Viper: Is he going to regain his sight?

Doctor: As I've said an eye expert will shed light on that matter

We looked at each other

Doctor Masango: Mr Khumalo has to start treatment soon; we can't afford to wait any longer

Old man: He was supposed to come and see you this coming Tuesday about that but as you can see he is here now

Doctor Masango: They are various treatment options; they can be confusing and difficult to comprehend especially in times like this. I am going to give you time to go through each and every one of them this information will explain to you how the

procedure works and possible side-effects both short-term and long-term. There's also this one that is common is an operation called craniotomy. It's a surgery that is performed in attempt of removing it completely if the tumour can be. So go through them and make a choice

He placed a booklet on the table

Doctor Masango: You need to understand each of them before you choose the one you think is suitable Mr Khumalo must be aware of all treatments

Me: We see so in the meantime what is going to happened are you going to keep him here?

Doctor Masango: He will be fine we will give him

drugs that will keep him calm and fine in the meantime. Most patients are given drugs that relieve swelling and control seizures. He will be discharged but not now the eye expert will have to examine him

Viper: Can we see him now?

Doctor Masango: Yes

We stood up

Old man: Craig please call your mother. She has to know...

Viper: I will do so

BUHLE

Yara made her way to where I was sitting

My heart was beating so fast they have been talking with the doctor and I am sure he has given them some information. I am not ready for bad news my heart won't take it

Her: Hey look at those puffy eyes

She hugged me

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: I will be fine. How is Lindo?

Her: He is going to be fine

I exhaled in relief

Me: What about his sight? Before he collapsed he said something about losing his sight...

Her: We are about to find out let's go

She held my hand

Her: He is going to be fine okay?

I nodded

MZOXOLO

My heart sunk when I saw him lying on the bed

Sponsored

okay?

I nodded

MZOXOLO

My heart sunk when I saw him lying on the bed he didn't look bad but isn't a pleasant sight to see your child helpless. I never thought one day I'd see him here and unable to help him

Doctor Masango: I will give you privacy

Viper: What do we do if his sight is not back when he opens his eyes?

Doctor Masango: You have to be ready for any reaction patients are different. He might be calm or the opposite

Viper: Can you please just stay? We might not know how to handle the situation

The door opened. Yara walked in with Lindo's girlfriend

Me: I was wondering where you have disappeared to

Yara: I went to look for her

Buhle: Mr Khumalo

Me: Buhle

Doctor Masango: You can go ahead and talk with him; he is not in deep sleep

Yara: Baba can we allow Buhle to talk with him first?

I nodded

She pulled the small chair and sat down

Buhle: Sthandwa sam

She held his hand

Buhle: Please wake up you haven't been out of it for long but I miss you already. I miss your annoying arse (Laughs) you have to wake up and get better. There's so much to do and we are not abandoning our plans

Lindo: I never said I was leaving you...

He moved his hand

Me: He is awake

Buhle: You scared me

He opened his eyes and kept quiet

Lindo: Sunshine...

Buhle: Mh

Panther: Why is it dark in here?

I exhaled softly and closed my eyes

He moved his head

Lindo: Buhle?

Me: Son

I walked up to the bed

Panther: Baba my sight is gone right? Be honest with me

Me: It seems so

He slowly nodded

MIMI

Ma: I wonder how Mzoxolo is feeling right now

I looked at her

Ma: What?

Me: Don't even think about it we don't need this drama right now

Ma: I am not thinking about anything. I am just a parent who is concerned about the other parent

Me: If you are really worried let's pray for the family. In times like this God is the only one who can help us

Ma: Since when do you pray?

Me: I pray to avoid problems like you going to comfort Mzoxolo so let's kneel before God and talk with me

Ma: Let me go and fetch my bible before I slap you

AYDEN

Viper leaned against the car and sighed loudly

Yara: Don't take long you need to rest Munchie

Me: I won't. You go and rest too I am coming

She hugged Viper

Her: Bye brother

Him: I'll call you

Yara walked away

Him: She is strong; she is like glue that is keeping us together

Me: I am worried about her; she doesn't need this

kind of stress

Him: She doesn't you will have to talk with her

Me: I will try

Panther was very calm about losing his sight we expected him to throw a fit but he didn't. It is alarming...

Me: Panther on the other hand he seemed like he was ready for anything

Him: The person we saw at the hospital is definitely not our brother I am afraid we have lost him

PARIS

I knocked on uncle Mzoxolo's study before I walked inside

Me: Baba...

The glass of whiskey was resting in his hand

Me: Can I come in?

Him: Yes

I closed the door and looked at him

Me: How is he?

Him: Apart from losing his sight he is fine-he will live

Me: I am sorry this is happening to you especially at this time when...

Him: When you are here demanding answers?

He chuckled and stood up

Me: Baba life is too short we don't know what await us and we have today to make the best out of it

Him: You will not stop to nag me will you?

Me: I didn't travel from Botswana for nothing

Him: Okay fine... but you will need to sit for this

I looked at him and then sat on the edge of the table

Him: Your grandmother was a maid at our house; she would sometimes bring your mother with her. Both me and your father fell in love with your mother I dated her but as time goes your father won her over. I got angry and fought with your father but we made up after a while I heard your mother was pregnant. Two months before you were born your father passed on and I saw a chance to make your mother pay for playing us

Me: How did you do it?

Him: I swapped you with the dead baby; I wanted to hurt her so badly but didn't want to hurt you

Me: You hated her that much to take me away and kept me as a secret for 30 years?

Him: I was in pain not thinking straight I honestly thought after couple of years I will return you and tell her the truth but I realised you were happy without her

Me: I was never happy yes Margareta was there but she is not my mother. I wanted my mom and you denied me that. You do realise what you did was a crime right? And how did you even manage to take

me out of the country without my mother's consent?

Him: Margareta posed as your mother besides when you have money anything is possible

Me: It means you don't love me if you were able to do something like this. I am just a pawn in your game to hurt my mother

Him: I love you so much; you are my brother's son

Me: Are you my father?

Him: What? No! Zimele was your father. I never slept with your mother and I'd never lie about that

Me: You already lied about many things how can I trust you with this?

Him: We can do test to prove it but I am not your father. Everything of yours is legit your names date of birth and where you were born

I stood up

Me: What's her name? Do you know where she is?

Him: Elizabeth. Finding her won't be hard

I shook my head

Me: I can't even look at you right now find my mother. I wanna leave this please

Him: Forgive me son

ELISA

I stared at the phone and shook my head

Maybe is really not a good idea to call Mzoxolo but I can't turn a blind eye to the situation. He is my child's father and I just wanna know how he is

feeling. My history with him has nothing to do with it. If you are a parent you will understand the pain of seeing your own in pain with no hope of recovering

I called him

Him: Elisa

Me: Morning sorry to just call

Him: It's okay it's been long

Me: I know but that's not why I called. I just wanted to check on you

Him: If it's about my son he is getting better. The

doctors are doing everything in their power

Me: That's good to hear I am keeping you and the family in my prayers. Well that's all I called for

Him: Elisa?

Me: Mh...

Him: Thank you for calling I really appreciate it

Me: You welcome

He hung up

"I thought we agreed to no calling Mzo" I slowly

turned around

Mimi folded her arms over her chest

Her: Why did you call him?

Me: That call meant nothing and why are you eavesdropping?

Her: I came to talk with you and I caught you busy flirting with Mzo

Me: I was not flirting

Her: So defence. I am defeated; you can't stay out of trouble

Me: Judging me is so easy

Her: You make it easy

Me: I am going to sweep the yard; I don't have time for your sermon

Her: Stay away from Yara's father he is vulnerable right now and if you are not careful...

Me: It won't come to that

I walked out

YARA

Today I called in sick. Before dinner last night I started feeling cramps in my womb so much that I hardly slept. Cramps kept on coming and going but later eased. Talking about bad time to get pregnant everything that is happening around me is slowly weighing me down. I feel it's too for one and I can't do anything about it

Me: Munchie would you like toast?

Him: Yes thank you miss one dimple

Me: Who you calling miss one dimple? I will starve you

Him: You won't dare

He winked at me

Him: You know there's something I forgot to tell you

Me: What?

Him: I talked with Mimsey about something regarding your future at Tshivhase firm...

I kept my gaze on him

Him: Why you looking so serious?

Me: There's Mimsey in your words

Him: You such a coward

A knock came through on the door

Him: Hold on we will talk about this later... Let me go and get it

He stood up

I watched him as he walked to the door; he wasn't balancing with the crutch. He is either recovering or

pretending; knowing Ayden anything is possible especially if he doesn't want to stress me

Him: Shawty Ethan is here

Me: Oh

I walked to the lounge

Me: Ethan what a lovely surprise

Ethan: Sorry to come unannounced especially at this time of the day

Me: Nonsense you are welcome. We were about to have breakfast...

Ethan: No thank you. Can we please talk?

Ayden: Let me excuse give you privacy. Please excuse me

Ethan: No please don't. This include you it's about the twins

Me: Let's sit down

We sat on the couch

Me: Are they okay?

Ethan: Not really

Ayden held my hand

Ethan: I am sure you still remember their reaction when you told us about your pregnancy?

How can I forget that? The sadness in their eyes didn't sit well with me

Ethan: I recently found out that they are feeling neglected and unwanted. They feel like you and Ayden no longer need them since you are expecting also the fact that you take forever to come is adding fuel to the flame. I know this is too much to ask and you have lot on your plate but my twins are at their breaking point. I am not trying to force your hand but please I am pleading with you both to at least squeeze them in your busy schedules. Even if it's

two hours of your time I'd really appreciate it

Guilt crept in

I didn't realise they were hurting like this and I am partially at fault. Goldie trusted me with them and what am I doing? The opposite

Ayden: We had no idea they were feeling unwanted it was never our intention. I am sure you know how much I love the twins and I will never do anything to hurt them let alone stopping Yara to spend time with them. I know they come first in her life but with everything that has been going on...

Ethan: I understand but they don't

Me: Ethan I don't even know what to say because there are no words that can stop the hurt I've caused to them. It never caught my attention...

I looked at Ayden

Me: I thought they were happy. Everything is happening so fast and I am putting them at the back forgetting they are kids and they pick things way too fast. But I promise you all of that is going to change

Ayden: We give you our word

Ethan: Again I am sorry; I am just father who is looking after his children

Ayden: And we understand I am about to become one and I am sure I will move mountains for my child. I applaud you for putting your children first

Me: I can't even look at you Ethan you and your wife trusted me with your children. I shouldn't be the one to bring pain to them I am their guardian

Ethan: Just try and be there for them that's all that matters right now

I held tight to Ayden's hand

Please Goldie forgive me

PANTHER

Life is funny one moment it's all exciting and well and the next moment a dark cloud is hovering around your head. Who would have thought that one day the mighty Panther would be lying in this bed with no sight? I've lived all my life with my sight and now I am forced to learn to live without it. Everyone is assuring me that all will be well but I am not really sure. I talked with my mother last night she cried so much when she heard my voice I could tell she was broken-hearted

The door opened

Buhle's cologne filled the whole room... I smiled

Me: Sunshine

Her: You've been waiting for me or what?

Me: I am blind but my nose can still smell your cologne

Her: How are you?

Me: You are here

Sponsored

I could tell she was broken-hearted

The door opened

Buhle's cologne filled the whole room... I smiled

Me: Sunshine

Her: You've been waiting for me or what?

Me: I am blind but my nose can still smell your cologne

Her: How are you?

Me: You are here and you?

Her: I am here

Me: But I am also tired of this bed I wanna go home and feel the comfort of my bed. With you by my side

She took my hand into hers

Me: I was thinking; would you like to move in with me? Just until I regain my sight

Her: I thought your mother is coming to the city

Me: She is but I want you. There are some things she won't be able to help me with only you can

Her: I'd like to

Me: I am sorry I didn't tell you what was happening with me I couldn't bring myself to hurt you

Her: If you don't hurt me who is going to? Not telling me was wrong; do you have any idea how scared I was when you passed out? I didn't know what was going on with you and if you'd live

Me: I didn't mean to

Her: It doesn't matter anymore you are alive. Do you know when you are going to start with your treatment?

Me: We are still waiting for my mother but I should soon

Her: You've decided on which treatment you are going for?

Me: I am thinking surgery Viper let me in on all treatments and I am thinking of going ahead with it

She put my hand on her cheek

Her: I am sorry this is happening to you

Me: It's life Sunshine; we don't choose how our lives go. Today I might be in this bed but that doesn't mean tomorrow it will be the same

Her: How are you so calm it's either you've given up or made peace with the situation. Things will soon get back to normal I don't know when but it will surely. I am here with you every step of the way. Now more than ever I'll never leave your side

A corner of my mouth rose

Me: I know I didn't make a mistake when I allowed my heart to be yours

She brought me in for a hug

Her: Ngiyakuthanda

Me: Nam ngiyakuthanda

Me: I miss your smile

She laughed softly

MZOXOLO

Telling Paris the truth was the hardest thing I know what I did was wrong but at that time it felt right. What happened between Zimele Elizabeth and me was a deadly love triangle. I really loved her and my ego was bruised it was a blow on the face. Zimele and I made up after some time well I heard he was diagnosed with cancer and has few months to live

and I couldn't keep on fighting with him. When he passed on I then saw an opportunity to snatch the baby Elizabeth wasn't going to do much to him either way. I gave Paris everything he needed but only now am I realising that I was selfish and wanted to avenge my feelings I should have made peace with the fact that she chose my brother over me but instead I decided to act like God. The least I can do is finding Elizabeth and try to put together the pieces the damage is too much but I will try. I last saw her 10 years ago and right now I don't know where she is because she no longer lives at her old house

I called an old friend of ours AJ

Him: Khumalo long time

Me: Ndlovu been busy man

Him: You and work how can I help?

I cleared my throat

Me: I want Elizabeth's contacts or address; I really need to see her

Him: After so many years why do you want them?

Me: It's personal

Him: There's nothing I don't know about you and her so I'll ask again. Why do you want them?

Me: Don't judge me for what I am about to say

Him: I know you so well to know better

MIMI

I know I said relocating has always been my dream and wish but right now I am willing to crash that dream. I love Ethan's children as my own and I will never do anything that is going to break their hearts. Relocating is only going to more damage I am not going to separate them and break their bond. If I do that then I will only be applying to be their enemy

I got on top of Ethan

Me: So I was thinking

He put his hands behind his head and looked at me

Him: Is that a good or bad thing?

Me: Good hauw! I think we should abort the relocating mission it's not worth it. We are not going to take the children away from Yara moving with them to another country is going to make us their enemy and we don't want that

Him: You sure about this?

Me: I am sure until they are grown there's nothing we can do

Him: I am sorry; I know how much you wanted this

Me: Long as I am by your side

My phone rang

Me: Hello

Voice: Mimi it's Zoe

Me: What do you want?

PANTHER

I didn't want to tell my mother I am sick because of this exact reason at least Buhle handled the situation very well. I guess when you are a parent things are different since my mother arrived here she has been doing nothing but crying. Questioning God and whatnot

Me: MaKhumalo can you please just stop crying?

Her: I am just being a mother I carried you for nine months and you have no idea how it pains me to see

you like this. God trusted me with you and now I can't even do a thing to ease your pain

Me: And you think crying is going to make things better? No it won't even start. I don't need you to break down whenever you see me

Her: I will try but I am not promising

Me: MaKhumalo...

Her: Okay fine. I promise you

Me: Thank you

Her: When are they discharging you?

Me: In two or three days and suddenly I am not looking forward to that. It's better to be in this bed than bumping into things in the house

Her: I'll be with you

Me: And about that I asked my girlfriend to move in with me. I hope you don't mind

Her: About time I'll be bonding with her and getting to know her a bit. I heard she is from KZN maybe I know her family

Me: And please do not give her hard time

Her: I am not crazy why would I do any of that? And

besides I am a loving mother who support her children

Me: I know. Have you spoken with Old man?

Her: No but he knows that I am in the city

Me: You planning to see him?

Her: Ha Lindo stop with questions! I am back to nurse you not to solve things with your father

Me: I am just saying life is too short to be going in circles. If you still love dad why not solve things?

Her: Let's talk about this after your surgery and when I am sure you are fine. Can we do that?

Me: Fair enough

Her: Should I get you something?

Me: No check the time for me. An eye expert is coming around 15:00pm

Her: Do you wanna me to stay?

Me: Long as you don't cry

Her: I promise not to

PARIS

I dragged my hands down my face furious at what my uncle had told me. I knew he was keeping something big but I never imagined it was this big. He literally stole me and he is not even remorseful all he does is defend his actions. What was my sin in being Elizabeth and Zimele's son? I spent 30 years thinking my mother doesn't love me only to find out that she "mourned me" she spent the last 30 years thinking I am dead and now I am going to show up at her doorstep and gave her the shock of her life. I have no idea how she is going to take all of this if she has children are they going to accept me? Or her new husband if she has one is he going to accept me? Where do I start to form a relationship with her? No uncle Mzo went too far what he did

wasn't a way to solve things

Lea gave me glass me of water

Me: Thank you

Her: You need to sleep; you haven't got any sleep and don't try and deny it

Me: I can't sleep with all these questions

Her: There's nothing you can do about that the damage is already done. What's important now is finding your mother and then we go back

Me: I don't even know if I wanna go back

Her: What are you saying? We don't belong here
Paris we are doing what we came here for and then
leave. We agreed on that

Me: I know what we agreed on and I remember also
saying chances of not coming back are slim

She sat down

Her: I get what you saying but we have a beautiful
home back in Botswana Margareta is still there.
What about our jobs and Mpendulo? No Paris we
are going back

Me: Lea please just stop! I still need to see my
mother... I'll think about that later why can't you
understand that?

Her: I've been supporting you on this journey of finding your mother and now you wanna do this to me? I don't believe this

I stood up

Her: You planned this didn't you?

Me: I didn't

Sponsored

trust me

Her: No I can't you can't just wake up and decide to stay in this foreign country

I set the glass on the table

Me: We can put in unpaid leave and find a tutor for Mpendulo I just need little time

She chuckled softly

Her: Unbelievable. If you wanna stay in SA go ahead but I am leaving with my son Paris we are not staying in SA. We don't belong here

Me: I belong here!

I half yelled

Her: And I don't

Me: I can't talk with you when you are like this; I am going for a drive

I grabbed the car keys and walked out

AYDEN

Later that afternoon Yara went and fetch the twins from school

There was no way we were going to sleep before talking with them Yara is heartbroken and so am I. The last thing we need is depressed children I really love the twins. It's hard to not love them they are adorable and Yara adore them. We need to talk with them; they need to know that we care

We were sitting in the lounge watching TV the silence was starting to get to me. They are awfully quiet

Yara: Can we talk?

I took the remote and lowered the volume

Me: Come and sit next to us

Lex: Want us to squeeze in?

Me: This couch is too big for the four of us

They stood up and got between Yara and me

Yara: I love you so much you know that? There's no one in this world who can replace you in my heart and I know lately I've been acting like I don't and I am sorry for that. If I made you feel unloved and unwanted I apologize

Me: You are the best thing that has ever happened to me all my life I didn't know how it is like to love a child but you made it possible. I knew you were

going to be part of my life since that day Yara pranked me and said you are her children. We didn't mean to push you away we love you a lot

Yara: And that will never change

Me: Not even the child that we are expecting can change that. He/she is going to be your younger sibling; you are part of our lives forever. There's no way to escape from us you are stuck with this old grumpy couple. Block everything that is making you doubt our love for you

They laughed softly

Me: I love you monkeys

“We love you too” they responded in unison

Yara: Are we forgiven?

Tenda: Yes you are

Lex put her hand on Yara’s tummy

Lex: Does it hurt? I heard the baby is inside there

Yara: Who told you?

Lex: I watch TV

Me: That’s our cue to leave buddy

I said to Rotenda

Yara: You gonna leave me with her?

Me: Damn right this conversation is not for us. I am going to help this one with homework before they leave

Tenda and I stood up

Me: Be good

MIMI

If I say I know what Zoe want from me then I'd be lying why the hell is she calling me? Can't she just leave us alone? Ethan doesn't need this I don't need this!

Footsteps sounded behind me I turned around

Buhle: I've been looking for you

Me: I passed by Ethan's house

Her: Miss Catalina was looking for you earlier on

Me: Did she say why?

Her: No but I am sure it has to do with the food
poison and the function

So Friday night there was a function and my team
served guests contaminated food I only got to hear
about it yesterday. Miss Catalina is probably looking
for answers I approved everything. I don't know
what happened but everyone who ate the food is
admitted

Me: That's the last thing that I need right now

Her: What's wrong?

Me: That psychotic girl called me

Her: Zoe?

Me: Yes

Her: What does she want?

Me: She asked to see me

Her: I am sure you told her where to get off

Me: Hell to the yes but there was something about her voice; she talked as if she was threatening me. Like if I don't go something is going to happened to me

Her: She is trying to scare you

Me: I know this is the reason why I wanted to leave the country but my children come first

Her: Then you head on with Zoe we don't know if being in mental institution has helped her or damaged her. If is the latter then you are in danger and you need to be careful

Me: That's what I am afraid of

MZOXOLO

Paris was sitting in the garden

I walked up to him

Me: Good afternoon

Him: Not now please I just need to be alone

I buried my hands deep in the pockets

Me: You'd be happy to know that I am looking for your mother if it all checks in today we might know where she is

Him: Nice

I sat next to him

Me: Are you ever going to forgive me?

Him: I don't know time will tell. Right now I am only focusing on finding my mother and hear the side of her story. As for you...

He shook his head

Me: I deserve this

My phone rang it was AJ

Me: Ndlovu

Him: I found her address

Me: That was fast

Him: She is very close to you; I don't know why you never cross paths with her

Me: Maybe it was never time

Him: I am sending the address now

Me: Thank you

I hung up

Me: That was the guy I asked to find your mother

she has been found

MIMI

I put my hand on my forehead I feel like I am coming down with cold. The headache is also adding to the stress

I folded the clothes and put them inside the closet

“Mimi have you spoken with Buhle?” My mother asked from the door

Me: I was just on a call with her

Her: Is Lindo fine? I can't stop thinking about him

Me: He is waiting surgery

I sat on the edge of the bed

Me: Honestly speaking Mama this is bad. I don't wish to be his parent at this moment

Her: I don't know what I would do if something happened to you or Yara. You are my life and I pray to God to always protect you

SOPHIA (MIMSEY)

I laid on the couch and picked the remote that was on the couch

“Mimsey I am going out. Do you need something?”

Amelia asked

Me: I don't feel like cooking you can order food for us

Her: When last did you cook?

I switched on the TV and muted the volume

(Door closes)

I turned my head

Me: It better not be your father because I swear I will strangle him today

Her: It's Zack junior

Ayden: Who are you gossiping about?

Her: Your father

Him: Do I have a father?

He hugged Amelia

Her: Zack Tshivhase (Laughs) I was on my way out
bye

Him: Bye

Me: Don't forget (Shouts)

Ayden sat across me

Him: Mimsey

Me: What a lovely surprise

Him: I needed to get away from the hospital; you can never get use to the smell of medication

Me: Eish how is Yara doing? And the family?

Him: You know her she is trying. The Khumalo's are unbreakable; they are doing whatever they can to stay strong

Me: I admire Yara in so many levels she is very strong Give her any challenge she will tackle it

Him: But I feel this is becoming too much

Me: Nothing is too much for her; you will say I told you

Him: I'd like to believe that

He crossed his arms over his chest

Him: Reason why I am here... I want you to call Uncle Petrous

Me: Okay...

Him: We need to pay damages to Masia family

Me: I've been thinking about that as well

Him: I don't want my child to be born before I pay the damages I feel like it's very important for me to show respect to her family. Yara falling pregnant should have come last

Me: Asking for her hand in marriage should have been the first thing but don't worry we will solve this; I will call your uncle. He will be so excited

Him: You know him too wee

Me: And your father?

Him: I will call him myself

BUHLE

Hours later the surgeon arrived it's now or never

Mimi held my hand

Her: You are not going to break down now you are strong and this is nothing

Me: What if he dies? I am only realizing now how scared I am (Whispers)

She Put her finger on my lips

Her: Never and I mean never utter those words.
Your man is going to come out strong and healthy

Me: I don't know Mimi

MaKhumalo stood at the door and waved at us

Me: Let's go

We walked up to her

MaKhumalo: Go and talk with him you have to

I shook my head no

Mimi: You have to go in there and talk with him. He

needs you

Me: Okay

I closed the door behind me and pulled the chair

Me: Sthandwa

I caressed the back of his hand

Him: Why are you crying?

Me: I am scared

Him: Don't be. Whatever happens I want you to know that I love you so much. I've never loved any

girl the way I love you Buhle

His voice cracked

Me: Don't talk as if you are saying goodbye Please
Lindo

Him: I am just letting you know I feel the need to

I felt my cheek warming with tears

The door opened

Sponsored

Yara stepped inside

Her: Hey

Me: Come... Yara is here

Her: Brother you are going to be fine. We will be waiting for you

The corner of his mouth rose

Her: You have to Lindo for everyone. You need to fight

She took his hand into hers

Her: For your nephew/niece

A tear escaped his eye

ZOE

I walked into the bathroom and locked the door

I rang Leo

Me: Are you set?

Him: Yes she just arrived at the hospital

Me: Please make sure no one sees you; I don't want anything traced back to me

Him: I've already sorted the CCTV they will suspect you but they will have no proof

Me: That's how I want it to be. And the video?

Him: The package must be arriving at the Station

I laughed softly

Him: What about the trio? Do you know who they are?

Me: I've done my research and I know who The Unfazed are

Him: And you are not shaken?

Me: Not even a little

Him: Mh

Me: Don't call me I will call you

Him: Noted

MBALENHLE (MA KHUMALO)

We watched Lindo wheeled to theatre

I held tight to Mzo

Him: Not in front of the kids

Me: It hurts Mzo I am his mother. He shouldn't be going through this

Him: I know but we have to be strong

I shook my head

Viper: Mama

I pulled him into my arms

Me: He is going to be fine son

MIMI

I walked Yara to the parking lot

Me: Baby daddy is not taking this well

Her: Not one bit

I hugged her

Me: Go home and rest you need to rest

Her: I do... I love you

Me: I love you too butterfly

I waved at Ayden who was in the car

My phone rang

Me: Cuddles

Him: How is it going there?

Me: They just took him to the OR

Him: I know how it feels to see your loved ones in helpless position. Do you want me to come there?

Me: No I will come there. Let me just say goodbye to Buhle

Him: Okay see you soon

I hung up

I shoved my phone in my pocket

Footsteps sounded behind me I turned around

Him: Hello

Me: Can I help you?

He grabbed my arm and pressed a cloth on my nose. I fought him but it was waste of time I am no match to him

This is not happening!

BUHLE

The surgery is going to take 3-5 hours; it's definitely going to be the longest hours of my life

I gave MaKhumalo bottle of water

Her: Thank you ntombi yam'

Me: You are welcome

She looked at me and not said a word

Her: Have you seen Craig?

Me: I last saw him with the nurse over there

Her: Okay

I ran my eyes around and saw police officers talking with the receptionist

She pointed at us. For weird reasons fear crept in

Officer: Good day

MaKhumalo: Officers can we help you?

MaKhumalo stood up

Officer 2: We are looking for Miss Bhengu

Me: This is she

Officer 1: Ma'am you are under arrested for acting in unison in the murder of Arav Singh you have every right to remain silent anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law. You have every right for attorney if you can't afford one state will provide one for you

MaKhumalo: What is going on here?

Me: Mama this is not what it looks like. Officer I didn't do anything

He roughly turned me around and hand cuffed me

Viper ran to us when he saw what was happening

Him: What the hell is going on here? Hey Officers!

Officer 2: Let us do our job

The Officer pushed me forward

Him: I asked you a question!

Officer 2: As I've said allow us to do our job in peace

Viper pushed the other Officer

Him: Not until you tell me why you are cuffing her

BUHLE

Things are not looking good for me or Mimi. Zoe sent the video to the authorities and we are in deep ish. I shouldn't be here! I should be by Lindo's side. Oh my word Lindo! I wonder how the surgery is going or if they are done already. Please Father give him strength to fight. He has to win this battle

Officer Shenge dropped the pen on the table and fixed his eyes on me

Officer S: We can do this the whole night if you like

Me: I have nothing to say without my Lawyer

Where is Viper with the damn lawyer? In fact the Lawyer is the least of my worries where is Mimi? Why wasn't she present when I was getting arrested?

Officer S: Miss Bhengu I've already shown you the video even the blind can see what really happened. So let's not waste each other's time and tell me what I need to know

I kept quiet

Officer S: You wanna play it like that?

He stood up

Officer S: Things are already hot for the both of you that is why Miss Masia decided to run

He nodded repeatedly

Me: That's insane; Mimi would never do something of that sort. She is anything but a coward

Him: Yet I don't see her here. Or is she here? Huh tell me

Me: There's explanation for all of this

Officer S: You said she was with you at the hospital right? So I am assuming she saw us and decided to escape. That's my theory

Me: Your theory is wrong. Absurd!

"Enough with questions Shenge leave my client alone" I ran my eyes at the door

Thanks Heavens!

Officer S: Mr Smith your client is charged and I have every right to question her

Mr S: In my presence! Miss Bhengu don't say anything

Mr Smith looked at the Officer

It's going to be a long night

ETHAN

I've been waiting for Mimi for the past two hours
and there's no sign of her

When I called her again her phone was on voicemail
all of this is weird. At first it kept on ringing
unanswered but now it's off her phone is always on
no matter what

“Daddy” Lex shook me

Her: Where is Aunty Mimi? We’ve been waiting for her

Me: That’s what I’d like to know

Let me call Buhle maybe she is still at the hospital

YARA

I walked out of the shower and wrapped the towel around my body. I slipped on slippers and made my way to the lounge

Me: I am making tea should I make a cup for you?

Ayden asked from the kitchen

Me: yes thank you

I laid on the couch and unlocked my phone

If there's one place I should be at right now that place would be the hospital

Him: Here's your tea

Me: Thank you

I took the cup from his hand

Me: I can't stop thinking about my brother

Him: Drink your tea and calm down

My phone rang on my hand

Me: Brother

Viper: Where is Mimi?

Me: At the hospital

Him: No she is not. We last saw her with you it's been hours

Me: It can't be. Ayden and I left her in the parking lot. Right

Sponsored

Munchie?

Ayden nodded

Him: Buhle is arrested and Mimi is nowhere to be found

Me: What are you saying Viper? Okay you know what? We are coming there

I hung up and stood up

Me: Mimi is missing Buhle is arrested

Ayden raised his eyebrow at me

Him: How is that possible?

Me: I don't know. Let me go and put on something warm please call my mother and check if Mimi is not at home

ELISA

I picked the mat and threw it inside the basin

My phone vibrated on the table... I dried my hands
and reached for it

Me: Hello

Him: Mama it's Ayden

Me: is Yara fine?

Him: Yara is fine

I sighed in relief

Him: But we are not sure if Mimi is is she at home?

Me: No she since left in the afternoon she hasn't returned. Where is my daughter? Did something happen to her?

Him: We don't know Yara and I last saw her at the hospital but now they are saying she never made it inside after we left

I staggered and put my hand on my chest

Me: Have you spoken with Ethan? She might be at his place

Him: He is the one who called when he realised she hasn't arrived after they made plans. And now her phone is off

Me: Oh Murena! Ndi mini zwezwi? (God what is this?)

Him: Don't stress yourself yet we will try to find out what happened to her

PANTHER

The surgery was a success the neurosurgeon got the whole tumour. It was the worst five hours of my life; a part of me didn't want to believe that I'll make it out alive. I always heard about complications and I was scared it would happen to me. But God lowered his hand and I made it out alive. Unfortunately the doctors are still not sure if losing my sight is permanent or reversible maybe it was in my fate to end up like this. Most important is the fact that I am alive and tumour free. I just need 4-8 weeks to fully recover from surgery. After that none of this would be remembered

MaKhumalo: You have no idea how happy I am to see you son. I was so scared

Me: It's all over now MaKhumalo

She caressed my forehead

I have bandage wrapped around my head

Me: MaKhumalo?

Her: Mh

Me: Where is Buhle? I thought she'd be the first person to come and see me. She was very sad and nervous when I went to surgery and she promised to wait until I come out. Now where is she? Or she is busy making herself pretty for her blind man?

Her: Eish son. How do I say this?

Me: Say what?

I asked worriedly

The door opened before she could utter another word

Voice: He is awake?

My father asked

Me: Old man what is going on? Where is Buhle?

Her: You think we should tell him?

Me: Tell me what!

I tried to get up

Her: Lindo stop it! You'll hurt yourself

Old man: Your mother is right

Me: I am getting pissed right now because you are both going in circles. Where is she?

Old man: She is arrested

I chuckled softly

Me: Arrested for what?

Old man: For being a witness in a murder but kept quiet about it

Me: That's bull!

I stripped the drip

Her: Lindo you need to calm down. Your brother is doing everything he can to help her

Me: I need to go and see her

Old man: That's crazy!

Me: I can't stay here and nothing! I hate the fact

that I can't help her I can't help her! I am blind and
can't help my woman

I half yelled

Her: Take a deep breathe son

ELISA

I stood at the stoep and rang Mimi again

"The number you've dialled..." I hung up and sniffed

Me: Where are you nana? Where are you?

I took a deep breath and bend down

I suddenly felt an intense feeling

Me: Why do I feel like I'll never see my daughter?
(Whispers)

SEASON FINALE

MIMI

[FOUR MONTHS LATER]

I sat on the floor and put my hand on my tummy

I found out I was pregnant three months ago the child is not Leo's because that night he raped me he used protection. I can say this child is my saviour since he found out I was pregnant he immediately stopped forcing himself on me. I never imagined one day I will be pregnant and kidnapped no single day has passed without me thinking about my family. It has been the worst painful and saddest four months of my life every day I kneel before the Lord and ask him to lower his hand and save me. A part of me wishes for death what's the use of living

if I am living as a prisoner but again I think about my child. I will not disappoint him/her but for how long am I supposed to cry before God can answer me? Leo is still following his sisters' orders. She calls every now and then just to check on me but Leo hasn't told Zoe that I am pregnant. I don't know why he is keeping it a secret but I am grateful... For the past four months Leo has been in here there's someone who brings food and clothes for us but the person doesn't come here. They meet halfway; I sometimes feel like Leo is warming up but scared to let me go. I might be imagining things

ETHAN

For the past four months I've been doing nothing but going around the streets looking and looking for Mimi. We honestly tried everything to find her but we are not getting any luckier. The police told us to expect the worst because it's been too long since she has disappeared. Zoe lost her marbles a month ago and they were forced to move her from the facility she was at to another one but I don't buy that theory. She acted crazy to avoid getting out because people were starting to question her reasons to stay if her psychiatrist is saying she is fine

I stood at the door and looked at my twins

Me: Wanna grab something to eat?

Since they learned about Mimi's disappearance they haven't been well. They are indifferent; they refuse food they not concentrating at school. I was then forced to find a therapist for them and so far I am seeing progress

Lex: No we good

Me: I wasn't asking get ready

ZOE

I walked into Mr Mohale's office and closed the

door behind me

He bit his upper lip when he saw me

Me: Are you busy?

Him: For you never!

He picked me and placed me on the desk

Him: I miss you

He kissed my neck

Me: I want us to discuss something

Him: Why are you disturbing our moment?

Me: Wait you'll have all of this after we talk

He sighed and pulled away

Him: Okay talk...

Me: I think now it's time I leave this place I've been here for too long and I think I am fine now

He looked at me

Me: But that doesn't mean we are going to stop seeing each other we can continue with our thing but not now. After I've taken care of few things

Him: There's nothing I can do to change your mind?

Me: No you need to let me go. I have some business to take care of on the outside

He swung his neck and brushed his head

Him: Okay I'll sign you out

Me: This afternoon pretty please

Him: Now you are pushing it

Me: Please

AYDEN

Yara screamed her lungs out in the bedroom she is probably fitting her clothes and they are not fitting

She's almost nine months along and big. Her baby bump is so big and she starting to struggle with lot of things at first I was excited thinking she is carrying twins but no!

Me: What's wrong?

Her: All of my clothes are not fitting

Me: Look for my pants and shirt Yara

Her: So that I can look like an elephant?

Me: Your words not mine

We laugh with broken hearts Yara hides her sadness very well but you can see she is not well. Whenever she gets a chance she cries we still don't know or have an idea of where Mimi could be. Zoe's brother disappeared in a blink of an eye we searched for him everywhere in the city but we never found him. We also managed to get the video and Buhle's name was cleared without evidence it was pointless to arrest her

Her: Have you spoken to Mimsey?

Me: No did she call?

Her: She did in fact she wanted to talk with you but she said your phone is on voicemail

Me: Oh flip! I forgot to charge it

Yara's mother gave us her blessings to move in together I think she is just scared to lose another daughter. My plans to start with the negotiations were short lived

Sponsored

we can't be celebrating when one of us is out there alone. It's unfortunate my child will be born out of wedlock but it is what it is

PANTHER

I was on a phone with Buhle

Me: I am coming back I am busy with something

Her: Why do I have a feeling you are keeping

something from me?

Me: I am not. Let's talk later

Her: Fine

I hung up

Viper: Why don't you tell her?

Me: I don't want to get her excited only to hurt her again. Let's first be sure and then we will tell everyone

Him: Where is Tooth?

Me: He will come later; he is taking care of our sister

Him: Okay by the way Sthe is on his way with Connie

After months of trying to find something on Leo we finally made a breakthrough his girlfriend and son just landed from overseas. She is going to be our tool to lure Leo and hopefully getting Mimi back. I am feeling positive about this

YARA

I dropped the fork on the table and pushed the plate forward

Ayden: You lost your appetite?

I nodded

Him: Maybe we should go home; I thought breakfast was going to cheer you up

Me: Thank you for trying Munchie and I am sorry if you feel like I am pushing you away. I appreciate you

Him: I understand and no one can blame you

Me: Take care of the bill

He waved at the waiter

Him: We are going to the house or your mom's?

Me: She is with my father let's go straight home

Him: Okay

He settled the bill... we stood up

Me: I was thinking of doing that photo shot I need something to cheer me up

Him: I will organise everything

As we walked out we bumped into a young kid at the door

Me: Careful little one

She stood in front of me and smiled

Me: Hello...

“Zoya wait you really need to stop running around. You will hurt yourself” a man I assumed is her father reprimanded her

Man: Please forgive me we are always telling her to stop running around

Ayden: They never listen (Laughs)

A beautiful and stylish lady appeared with a baby
between her arms

Lady: Danny it seems like we won't be eating here I
received a call and...

She froze when our eyes met

There was something about her presence she took a
step forward and attempted to talk but nothing
came out

Danny: What were you saying?

Lady: Your sister needs you she is crying for you to

save her. You have to save her before they think of killing her. She has something that can put her life in danger find her! The man in her life right now is trying to save her from the woman and only he can calm the woman. If they turn against each other blood will be shed

She looked at Ayden

Dee: Whatever you are planning please go ahead with it you are going to find her but you need to stop dragging your legs

Me: What what do you know about my sister? Do you know where she is?

She started breathing heavily

Danny: Dee you need to calm down baby. Please breathe

He took the baby from her and looked at us

Danny: Sorry again but my wife can sense and see things an ordinary human can't... don't be scared

Ayden: It's okay...

Me: Dee right?

Dee: Dakalo Muremi

Me: Yes Mrs Muremi can you help us?

ZOE

Getting to the countryside was a mission and a half; I had to be extra careful. The trio is still keeping tabs on me well they never stopped. They went as far as getting someone to work as a nurse to look closely at me but a tiny accident happened and he died

Leo: Why are you dressed as a nurse?

Me: That's some stupid question. How was I supposed to get here without being caught?

He hugged me

Him: I miss you

Me: I miss you too

Him: Why didn't you tell me you were getting out?

Me: Why do I feel like you are not excited to see me?

Him: I am...

He sat on the table

Him: Tell me what are you planning to do with

Mimi?

Me: That's why I am out; I want us to leave the country

Him: What about her?

Me: We will call the police when we are out of the country they will come and rescue her

Him: Was this worth it?

Me: Yes it was and I don't regret it

Him: Well I do I regret what I did to her. I should have stopped long time to listen to you! I raped her Zoe I raped her!

I slapped him across the face

Me: Why did you do it? I told you to keep her here only not keep her and rape her!

Him: I got tempted

Me: You are so stupid Leo. Where is she now?

Him: Sleeping. There's something you don't know...

Me: What?

Him: She is pregnant but it's not mine

Before I could answer him his phone rang

Him: Connie... who is this and why are you calling me using my girlfriend's phone...? What?

He looked at me

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my

disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That

thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan.

When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end

this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house
what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right
address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you
that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family
member can work in our favour. No one in their
right minds would wish for their loved ones to go
through trauma when there's something they can
do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is
going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to

look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of

this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love

and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong

people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my

first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the

manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house
what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right
address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you
that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family
member can work in our favour. No one in their
right minds would wish for their loved ones to go
through trauma when there's something they can
do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is
going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to
look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did

was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't

get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself

time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer

differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all

sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but

this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house

what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The

day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer

differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all

sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but

this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house

what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The

day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong

people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my

first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the

manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house
what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right
address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you
that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family
member can work in our favour. No one in their
right minds would wish for their loved ones to go
through trauma when there's something they can
do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is
going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to
look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did

was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't

get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself

time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong

people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my

first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the

manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house
what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right
address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you
that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family
member can work in our favour. No one in their
right minds would wish for their loved ones to go
through trauma when there's something they can
do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is
going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to
look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did

was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't

get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself

time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong

people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my

first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the

manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house
what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right
address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you
that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family
member can work in our favour. No one in their
right minds would wish for their loved ones to go
through trauma when there's something they can
do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is
going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to
look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did

was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't

get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself

time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer

differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all

sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but

this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house

what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The

day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt

my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of

controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I

thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn

out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for your out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents

covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need

medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited
with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will

never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and

sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get
Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for
everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of
this you too deserve some happiness and you won't
get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I
can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who

struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he

won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And

right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but

medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you

that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason.

Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get
Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for
everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of
this you too deserve some happiness and you won't
get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I
can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan

saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I

could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I

did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take

my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I

imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way

forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get

Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be

different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still

stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me.

With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can

do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?
Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was

diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of

manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I

answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is

out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's

where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked

for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust

white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?
Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their

hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my

condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong

answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their

right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that

direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building
there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The
day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part

of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a

priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their

attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my

therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain

your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go

through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that

direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part

of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my

medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted

but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never

talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held

hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; Sthe is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go

through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that

direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny (Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part

of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer

differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all

sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but

this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever. Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house

what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of this you too deserve some happiness and you won't get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The

day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law.
Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey
needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can
do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he
won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust
white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when
we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that
question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me

now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing

the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

SEASON FINALE

ZOE

I stared at Mimi; she raised her head when she felt my presence

I glanced down at her small bump and for the first

time I didn't know what to say or do. My brother had always been by my side since childhood there's nothing I would ask and he wouldn't do for me. And right now I am feeling bad so bad. The first mistake I did was not admitting I have a problem when I was diagnosed I wanted nothing to do with medication. I can say I blame my parents for not firming their hand when it comes to making sure I am taking my medication but I was also suppose to make it a priority. They only started seeing how serious it was when I attacked my first victim that was when they knew something is wrong. When I take my medication all is well but the minute I stop my disorder take control over me and I let it happened by refusing help. Truth is I always love the wrong people or so I think I love them I can no longer differentiate if I love them or love the idea of controlling them. I am delusional and obsessive!

Me: You know I've lost count of all the guys I've

loved and none of them loved me back. I always look for love in the wrong places and I tend to use my disorder as an excuse. Yes it is deadly but medication is there for a reason I chose to not take my medication because I loved the idea of manipulating others. I wish my parents had courage to admit that somehow they had a hand in my condition growing up we had everything we wanted but their love. I resorted to do things to get their attention and slowly but surely I became obsessed to get my parent's love. I'd hurt myself I'd try to get my mom sick so that she doesn't go to work or injure my brother just to make them stay. That thing became part of me I started to think for me to get something I need to do this and then I had my first crush. And that was when I started doing all sort of things to get his attention it was insane but I thought what I was doing was right. Moses was my first victim when he rejected me I exploded and hurt him instead of getting punished my parents covered everything. Years later I hurt two other

ladies and that was when they locked me up. I was away for about a year

She stood up and walked towards me

Me: This is my first time saying all of this; I never talked about my feelings with anyone not even my therapist. And I am not saying this to manipulate or emotional blackmail you. I shouldn't have done this... I should have seek help and not ruin my friendship but before my disorder I truly love Ethan. When i heard Goldie died I thought why not? But when he rejected me I decided to wake the manipulator in me hoping he would love me but this time it wasn't the case

Her: You are not a bad person Zoe yes this is bad but we can still end it. I am pregnant and I need medical attention. You can't keep me here forever.

Your parents wronged you but you could have fought this disorder and accepted help

Me: I know my brother asked me a question and I answered him but now I think I gave him the wrong answer. I regret this as we speak my nephew is held hostage because of my actions. I am feeling the pain your family have been feeling for the past few months

Her: Then let me go please Zoe (Crying) we can end this madness. You can still get help you can do this

I put hand on her belly

Me: I am sorry; you shouldn't have been exposed to this

I stared into her eyes

Me: Forgive me and tell Ethan I am really sorry

Her: Zoe...

Me: Don't say anything; you will soon be reunited
with your family

I walked out of the room

AYDEN

The day is turning out to be better than how I imagined it to be. The search is underway; She is out looking for houses in the west that are abandoned

Connie: For how long are you going to keep me here? My son is scared...

Viper: Your boyfriend will decide on that

Connie: I've given you the address of the house what more do you want?

Me: We still making sure you gave us the right address

Viper; Seems like your boyfriend doesn't love you that much I mean if it was me I'd be here already

In our line of work we know how much a family member can work in our favour. No one in their right minds would wish for their loved ones to go through trauma when there's something they can do about it. Leo will be forced to co-operate he is going to betray his sister but Zoe is a ticking bomb

Panther: We should be out there helping Sthe to look; time is not on our side gents

Me: Let me call him

I rang Sthe

Sthe: Boss

Me: Any progress?

Sthe: The address checked out I see a car

Me: Okay

Sponsored

you can come back now. We need you here...

I hung up

Me: We got him

Panther: How I missed action! You will soon be going home we got your man

YARA

When I woke up I didn't think my day would turn out to be like this but God has other plans for me. There's no guarantee if Mimi is in the house that Dee saw in her vision but I have faith. God will never make our paths cross if he didn't have plans

for us; we bumped into each other for a reason. Ayden went to meet with my brothers to tell them about the latest development and to find a way forward. Dee told us to look in the west that's where we will find Mimi. Ayden mentioned something about few abandoned house in that direction so there's hope after all

Buhle: Mama you need to eat something

Ma: I can't stomach anything at this moment

Me: Maybe we should pray we need God right now

Buhle: You are right

ZOE

Leo was pacing up and down

Him: If they find out what I did to Mimi they are going to hurt Connie

Me: You shouldn't have raped her Leo what you did was wrong

Him: I know but I am here because of you! My son is somewhere there because of you. If you ever love me you will let Mimi go... Your nephew and sister-in-law are kept hostage just like Mimi. Please

Me: Okay fine! I will turn myself in; you will get
Connie and LJ back

Him: You are not doing that

Me: Then you want them to die? Are you crazy?

Him: What if you go and I take the blame for
everything? I will say I was the mastermind for all of
this you too deserve some happiness and you won't
get that if you are arrested

Me: Ek kan nie van u verway om dit te doen nie (I
can't expect you to do that)

He held my hand and we sat down

Him: From deep inside don't you wish to be different and just be normal?

Me: I do but sometimes I can't help myself

Him: Because you take medication for a month after that you don't see reason to continue. Your disorder is manageable and controllable. I know there's someone for you out there who will love and care for you. All you need to do is give yourself time and wait for that person

Me: I really went too far right?

He nodded

Me: Ek sal gaan maar my aanbod bly steeds ons kan saamstaan en weer begin (I will go but my offer still stand we can go together and start afresh)

Him: No let me do this for you. Give you a chance in life. I also need to pay for what I did to Mimi

Me: Ek het jou lief (I love you)

I hugged him

Him: Ek is lief vir jou ook (I love you too)

Me: Bel en se vir hulle om te kom (Call and tell them to come)

Him: What about you?

Me: I know someone who is going to help me

Him: You need to get out of here before they come

YARA

I was on the phone with Mimsey

I've been thinking a lot about starting a foundation for people who outlived Cancer and those who struggling with money to get treatment and before I

could finalise things Mimi disappeared. Panther liked the idea and thought of partnering with me. With everything that has been going on we asked for Mimsey to handle things for us. It will be in honour of Goldie

Her: We are done with renovating the building there's much left

Me: Thank you so much you've been a great help

Her: You know how much I love charity things. The day for grand opening is yet to be set

Mimsey has turned to be the best mother-in-law. Your mind can be your greatest enemy and Mimsey needed to see that first

Me: I think we should hold on in that maybe we can do all of this when my sister is found

Her: Let's be hopeful

PANTHER

Two hours later we arrived to the house we left
Sthe with Connie

We are going to caught Leo off guard hopefully he won't act get crazy and hurt Mimi

Me: What if he has set a trap for us I don't trust white people

Ayden: Are you really asking that question when we've arrived to the lion's den?

They laughed

Viper: I feel like punching your face for that question

Me: Let me break the door

The burglar door was not locked

Viper: No need for that let's just find a way to unlock the door

I held the door handle and the door opened

Viper: Tha was easy

I pulled out my gun

Me: Funny moves we shoot but be careful to not shoot Mimi

Viper: Got it

We walked inside...

I ran my eyes around we expected an old house with a falling roof but no the house is in good shape

Me: Leo come out! And don't try anything funny
(Shouts) think about your girlfriend and son

Me: Search the house

Ayden walked to the other room Viper went to the other as well. As I was about to climb the stairs Leo showed up with Mimi... She is pregnant?

Motherfucker got her pregnant? Oh God help me now

He was holding her hand; you couldn't miss tears in her eyes

Leo: Drop your gun because I have no intentions to run

I shoved my gun in my jacket

He let go of Mimi she ran to my arms crying. A part of me thought he was going to shoot her

Me: It's all over now

She held tight to me crying so hard

My heart ached I was crying inside

Viper: There's no sign of them in the other room...

Ayden: Nothing

They stopped talking when they saw Leo without warning Viper jumped at him and started punching his face

Viper: Give me reason why I shouldn't kill you!

Ayden held his hand and twisted it

Me: Tooth hold up and you Viper. We are not killing the guy; we don't wanna go to jail. Think about your family

Ayden: Where is Zoe?

INALE

MIMI

I felt a hand on my belly and immediately knew who it belonged to

Me: Ethan I need to rest. Let me...

Him: You have enough time to rest I need to spoil you and I am sure the twins are dying to see you cuddles

I spent the night at Ethan's he didn't want to let me go and I didn't too. I had missed him and our twins

my mother and Yara on the other hand-they were so emotional couldn't believe that I am finally reunited with them. I don't want to start with Buhle everyone was just happy to see me. I then realized how much they were hurting five months of looking without success-sleeping not knowing where I was or if I was still alive. I got lucky that Panther and the guys rescued me because if they hadn't I don't want to think what would have happened. Even though Zoe looked remorseful I still don't know what she could have done. The trio risked their lives to save me and I will never thank them enough. I will forever be grateful to God I know he took his time but he protected me. Now I need to focus on my child and my family...

I slightly opened my eyes

Me: You are such a bully

He ran the back of his finger on my face

Him: Forgive me

Me: For what?

Him: For what you went through I am partial at fault. I brought Zoe into our lives and I was naïve to think she would just let it go

I sat up straight

Me: No don't blame yourself because I don't. Zoe was just in her own world what she needed was help and admitting that she need one

Him: But still I feel like I failed you. You were somewhere in the world with our child anything could have happened to you

Me: From what I've heard you did everything to find me and that means a lot. I am back to you and our twins with our child let's focus on that

He leaned and kissed me

Him: I took the liberty of calling a family friend who is a therapist and made an appointment for you

Me: Is it really necessary?

I did tell Ethan what happened Leo raping me. I needed him to know in case it was important for me

to tell him

Him: You need counselling it wasn't your first time when a man forced himself on you. You are hurt and you need to find peace before our baby is born. You need to talk about your struggles with someone I don't want you to be bitter and angry all the time. To avoid problems in the future you need to talk with someone

Me: Okay I will go... now can we get something to eat? Daddy...

(Door opens)

Him: What did I tell you?

The twins jumped on the bed

Me: Good morning

“Aunty Mimi we missed you” they said unison

Me: I miss you too

Lex: We thought we had lost you forever

Tenda: Don't ever leave us

Me: I will never I promise

AYDEN

I was standing at the balcony; I looked at the sky
admiring the birds chirping

For the longest time I feel like things are finally
falling into place everyone in this family has had
his/her share in sadness and pain. Right now I need
to focus on my woman and preparing for the arrival
of our little one. We've lost so much time on things
we had no control over and God knows how much
we struggled to get over them

I received a call from Mimsey

Me: Mimsey

Her: I assume we can proceed with negotiations I can tell your uncle to send the letter

Me: There's nothing stopping us now. You can go ahead

Her: Where is my daughter-in-law?

Me: She is around; today I am doing something special for her today. Just to cheer her up

Her: She deserve it

Yara: Munchie

I turned around

Me: We will talk later Mimsey

Yara: Say hi to her

She mouthed

Me: Yara send hello

Mimsey: Greet her for me

Me: Bye

I hung up

I opened my arms for her

Me: Going somewhere?

Her: Yes to see my brother. We need to talk about few things regarding the foundation

Me: Don't take long. Viper will be here late noon for photo shoot

Her: I won't. Let me go now

I kissed her

MIMI

My mother pulled the chair and sat down

Ma: How are you holding up?

Me: It's hard Ma but I am trying to look past it I want to forget about it. I feared for my life whenever he stepped inside the room I thought it was my last day. I didn't understand why God is taking his time to rescue me but of course everything happens for a reason

Ma: I am sorry I wasn't there for you

I wiped my tears

Me: But it's all over now what I need now it's support to heal and move on. For my child and my sanity

Ma: And you are going to heal. This too shall pass

Me: I know

Ma: Have you called your father?

Me: No pass me my phone. Let's call him now

PANTHER

I circled my arms around Buhle's waist

Me: What time are you leaving again?

Her: I am waiting for Mimi to call me

Me: Okay

Her: Thank you for doing everything in your power to rescue Mimi it was very courageous of you to do something of that nature

Me: If I could I'd do it again and again

She stared deep into my eyes

Me: Everyone is having a baby would you like to fall pregnant?

She laughed softly

Her: Are you proposing we get pregnant?

Me: Is that a bad thing?

Her: No it's not

(Door shutting)

Her: Expecting someone?

Me: Must be Yara

“Anyone home? Hello” she shouted from the lounge

Me: In here

Yara and I are in process of starting a foundation for cancer patients it will focus on patients struggling with finance. Also those who need counselling different form of counselling e.g. legal counselling... Yara is doing this in honour of Goldie me on the other hand I feel like offering support cancer is a

battle and every patient deserve immense support

Yara: Get a room

Me: We had the room to ourselves

She hugged Buhle and then me

Buhle: You look very big...

Yara: I know and thank you

They laughed

Buhle: Let me give you some privacy I will get something for you to drink

Me: Thank you Sunshine

We sat down

Me: Tell me you got the name please!

Yara: I do and don't make it sound bad

Me: Don't get me started

Her: Whatever... So I was thinking After Her: Goldie
Foundation

I nodded repeatedly

Me: I love it it has nice ring

She smiled at me

YOLANDA GRIFFINS

I sat across Leo

He called me an hour ago saying he got arrested last night I can't say I was surprise. I knew something like this was going to happened

Me: Was it worth it?

He looked at me and shook his head

Me: Where is your sister? I haven't heard anything about her

Him: She left the country

Me: So you decided to take the blame for her?

Him: As you can see... For my sister I'd do anything at least I show her love unlike you and Dad

Me: Don't you dare pin this on me. I didn't tell your sister to go and kidnap someone at least I show her love unlike you and Dad

Me: Don't you dare pin this on me. I didn't tell your sister to go and kidnap someone she did this herself

Him: You are really going to sit there and pretend as if you didn't contribute somehow in the way she is? All she ever needed was your love Mom but you failed to give her that. She did what she did to feel loved and it resulted in obsession. So don't act smart with me

Me: And you think helping her to escape is going to heal her? She is still going to act crazy

Him: Zoe is not crazy!

He hit the table

Him: Please go! It was a mistake to call you; you've already made up your mind

I stood up

Him: Stand before the mirror and see the monster you are

YARA

Ayden planned a maternity photo shoot for me

Viper is our photographer. The shooting was at the house in the garden; we decided on something intimate and not go overboard

It was a beautiful moment especially having family surrounding me Mimi came with the twins. I took few pictures with them they make part of my family and having them in my pictures is the amazing thing to do. Unfortunately Nosizwe couldn't make it she went to EC

Viper: Buhle pass her the booties

She gave me the booties

I was wearing a short red dress with long sleeves; my belly has a nice round shape. My hair was tied into a ponytail

Viper: Put them on your belly and put your left hand on the side of your belly

I did as told he took few pictures

Viper: Lovely. Now poke your neck out towards the camera

We continued taking more pictures. All of this is amazing few touches on my belly and smiling to the camera is heavily

Ayden: Now can I get my chance?

Mimi: Baby daddy tired of watching (Laughs)

Buhle: Give him a chance

Viper: Go and change into something more revealing we need more of that bump in the pictures

Me: I am still your sister you know that?

He winked at me

Mimi helped me to change into something. This time we were going for something more intimate I was in my underwear and bra. It was very funny and weird to be naked in front of my brother but hey! We only live once and I wanna enjoy this as much as I can

Ayden: You look so sexy... (Whispers)

Me: Behave; we are in front of people

He went down on his knee and put his head on my belly Viper took few pictures whilst we change poses

Everything was fine until I started feeling an intensified pain on my belly this pain is not related to baby kicks at all. Earlier on I felt contractions but I played no mind to them but it seems they are getting stronger

Me: Ah!

Everyone looked at me

Mimi: Yara what's wrong?

Ayden: Shawty are you fine?

Me: I am having cramps

Ayden: We need to get you to hospital maybe you are going in labour

Me: It can't be it's too early I still have two weeks. It can't be!

Buhle: Any contractions?

I nodded repeatedly

Me: Maybe it's Braxton Hicks

Mimi: We can't risk it let's go

Ayden: Viper go and take the baby bag. Mimi get something for her to wear. Something light

I hope something is not wrong pain shot my abdomen again and I groaned in pain

ZOE

I gave this lot of thought and I can't let my brother take the fall he has been doing that all his life. It's time I show him how much I love him. I won't be able to live with myself if I turn my back on him

I stepped inside the Station and walked to the helping desk

Me: Good day I am here to turn myself in

They looked at me as if I swore at them

YARA

The minute I stepped in the hospital my water broke the urge to push jumped in. I knew right there that my baby is here

I was taken to the delivery room right away

Me: I can't do this! (Yelling) no I can't. Oh God!

I held tightly to Ayden's arm

Him: You can do this Shawty; all you need to do is breathe and help your body to push the baby out. Keep on pushing!

Doctor: You are doing a great job... Push one more

time

Like hell I am! Never see me again getting pregnant
dick will wait!

Ayden: Keep going you can do this. Soon our baby
will be here

Doctor: Just a bit more

I pressed my lips and pushed harder

Doctor: I can see the head one more time. Keep
going yes just a bit more

I closed my eyes and pushed again this time I
pushed for my dear life

The first cry suddenly filled the whole room; I sighed deeply and laid back

Ayden: You did it Shawty

Doctor: Congratulations it's a boy

He said lifting the baby up

Ayden: You heard that? It's a boy (Smiles)

I couldn't believe I had just given birth Jesus Christ!

The doctor laid him on my chest; tears were now streaming down my cheeks. He was absolute the

cutest baby I'd ever ever seen

Me: Hello happy birthday my love. Say hi to daddy

I am only realising now that Ayden is crying

Him: Welcome Alexis Mufunwa Tshivhase you were worth the wait

He held his tiny hand and kissed my forehead

Him: Thank you for this gift of life you were amazing. I love you Shawty

Me: I lost my heart on you

I stared at him again and smiled

Me: Bless you Alexis May all the blessings of our Lord touch your life today

“Although the world is full of suffering it is also full of the overcoming of it”

I've said it before and I will repeat it again your present circumstances don't determine where you can go. Love peace and light!

THE END

